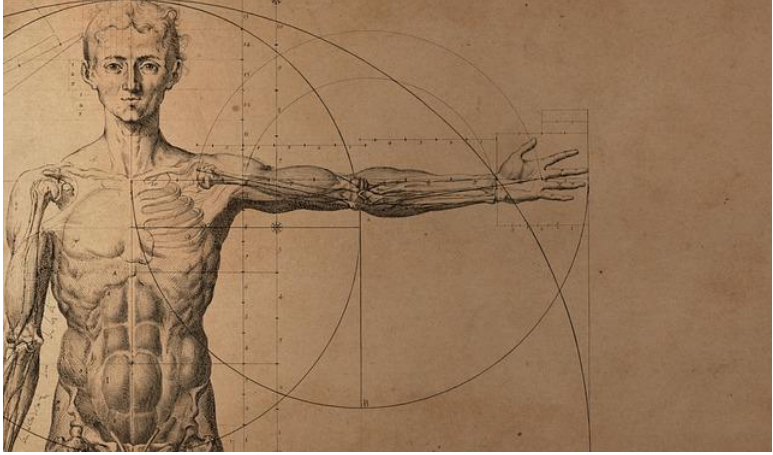


Man Has Always Been Man

Scientific & Doctrinal Revelations on Biological Similarities, Genetics,
Adaptations, the Ape-Man Hoax, Adam, Eden, & The Fall
(Restoring the Creation Vol. 2)



R. Nathan Richardson

“Man has always been man. Dogs have always been dogs. Monkeys have always been monkeys. It’s just the way genetics works.”

-Russel M. Nelson

Updated 9.15.26

This work is copyrighted and can be shared with attribution for educational purposes (CC BY SA 4.0).

Visit RichardsonStudies.com for a free sharable eBook of this work.

Paperbacks are available on Amazon.

Contact RichardsonStudies@protonmail.com



Restoring the Creation Series

Vol. 1 Doubt, Dogma, & Danger

Evolution Theory as a Threat to Church, School, & State

Vol. 2 Man Has Always Been Man

Scientific & Doctrinal Revelations on Biological Similarities, Genetics, Adaptations, the Ape-Man Hoax, Adam, Eden, & The Fall

Vol. 3 It's a Young Earth After All

Scientific & Doctrinal Revelations on Geological Layers, Radiometric Dating, Dinosaurs, Noah's Global Flood, & The Cosmos

Condensed Earlier Version of Entire Series

Who Needs Evolution When You've Got the Restoration?

An Inspired Approach to Science & Religion

Occasionally in this book, as a way of pointing out common claims of evolutionists, I will refer to the 2023 book, “Let’s Talk About Science and Religion” by Jensen & Bybee. I’ll refer to this book as “LTSR” and reference quotations from it.

“Upon hearing such carping insolence, my zeal could not be contained... I decided to appear openly in the theater of the world as a witness of the sober truth.” (Galileo Galilei, Dialogue)

Color code:

- **Red** – Scriptures.
- **Blue** – Latter-day Prophets
- **Green** – Scientists.
- **Brown** – Quotes from the BYU evolutionist book “Let’s Talk about Science & Religion” (LTSR) by Jamie Jensen & Seth Bybee. Related quotes from BYU evolutionists will also be in brown.
- **Purple** – When I’m highlighting writings of others and add commentary of my own, I do so in a separate paragraph, and in purple, formatted with “Note: ... End note.”



Acknowledgments

Special thanks to Jeremy Michel for prodding me to take on the project of responding to the evolutionist book “Let’s Talk about Science and Religion.”



(Nate & Jeremy Africa in Africa on the quest for the Mokele Mbembe dinosaur.)

Special thanks to Brenda High, Glen Nichols, Utahna, & Shannon Salisbury for help editing.

Special thanks to Dr. Robert Wright (afloodofhope.com) for contributing several essays to this book. Dr. Bob’s faithful research incorporates many truths to, as he says, break the wall between science and religion. Bob was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master’s Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It’s OK to Believe* and *Satan’s War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com. As Dr. Bob says, "God didn't have to tell us how He created, yet in loving condescension He did—both in Genesis and through the prophets."



(Nate & Dr. Bob at the 2026 Book of Mormon Evidence conference.)

Special thanks for research of Vince Newmeyer, Dean Sessions, Russ Barlow, Dennis Isaacson, Owen Ira Terry, Jeremy Michel, David Barker, Lance Weaver.

Special thanks to Dr. Kent Hovind and his legendary creation seminars which helped me begin to find my way in the dark, and which showed me how to boldly stand for truth. I've enjoyed meeting and working with this hero.



(Nate with the legendary Dr. Kent Hovind at Dinosaur Adventure Land in Alabama.)

Special thanks to Dean Sessions, author of Universal Model: A New Millennial Science, for pushing me forward in creationist studies, and providing many brilliant resources.



(Nate sharing findings from Universal Model science research, and with author Dean Sessions.)

A few I haven't worked with directly but have learned a lot from such as Vance Ferrel, Henry Morris, Stephen Meyer, Michael Behe, Phillip Johnson, and a whole multitude of witnesses in the creationism movement who continue to daily publish tremendous evidences of the Biblical creation and who expose the frauds of evolution science.

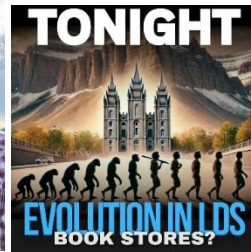
Special thanks on religion/church history research to Ezra Taft Benson, James Stoddard, Daniel Burdett, Clark Peterson, Rodney Turner, and Dennis Isaacson. Special thanks to Joseph Fielding Smith and his 1954 landmark book, 'Man: His Origin and Destiny'. The original publication of this book in 2024 commemorates the 70th anniversary of that timeless treasure.

Special thanks to my kids for some fun meme ideas, their prayers for this work, and their encouraging smiles. Most of all, special thanks to my wife for enabling me to spend time on this intensive project, and her intelligent suggestions for this work.





(Some teachers at the May 2026 Divine Design Utah Creation Science Conference. Left to right: Rod Meldrum, Russ Barlow, Jeremy Michel, Dean Sessions, Boyd Tuttle, Nate Richardson.)



ABBREVIATED CONTENTS

Part 1: DNA & Genetics

Part 2: Microbiological Design: Astonishingly Complex Machines

Part 3: Similar Structures

Part 4: No Such Common Ancestor: The Fake Biological Tree, The Lack of
Transitional Fossils, & The Limits of Species Change

Part 5: The Ape-Man Hoax

Part 6: Adam: The Direct Creation of Immortal Man in the Beginning

Part 7: Eden, The Fall, and the Entrance of Death into the World

Contents

PART 1: DNA & GENETICS	13
Introductory DNA & Homology Science.....	13
Genetic Blunders in the 2025 “The Restored Gospel of Jesus Christ & Evolution” Book.....	17
Dr. Jeff Tomkins, PhD Geneticist: These New Discoveries About DNA CONFIRM God Is Real – Lecture Highlights	19
Scientific Discoveries Favoring Creation over Evolution with Dr. Nathaniel Jeanson on Genetics Etc. – Lecture Highlights.....	23
Held Together by Design: Laminin and the Wonder of God’s Creative Hand by Dr. Robert Wright	Error! Bookmark not defined.
The Genetic Clock They Ignore by Dr. Robert Wright.....	24
PART 2: MICROBIOLOGICAL DESIGN: ASTONISHINGLY COMPLEX MACHINES	29
Held Together by Design: Laminin and the Wonder of God’s Creative Hand by Dr. Robert Wright	29
Darwin’s Black Box Book by Biochemist Michael Behe PhD (On The Cell, Irreducible Complexity of Molecular Machines, Lack of Transitional Forms, Insufficiency of Natural Selection) - Highlights & Commentary.....	33
Behe Black Box Ch.’s 1-2 The Box is Opened.....	33
Behe Black Box Part 2 – Examining the Contents of the Box (Ch. 3-7)	38
Behe Black Box Ch. 3 Flagella	38
Behe Black Box Ch. 4 Blood.....	39
Behe Black Box Ch. 5-7 From Here to There; A Dangerous World; Roadkill.....	39
Behe Black Box Afterward: Highlights.....	40
Darwin on Trial by Phillip Johnson: Ch. 7 The Molecular Evidence – Highlights & Commentary.....	42
PART 3: SIMILAR STRUCTURES	44

Similar (Homologous) Bone Structures?..... 45

Evolutionary Leftover (Vestigial) Structures?..... 48

Similar Embryos?..... 50

Reproduction Only After Their Kind: Doctrine..... 52

PART 4: NO SUCH COMMON ANCESTOR: THE FAKE BIOLOGICAL TREE, LACK OF TRANSITIONAL FOSSILS, & LIMITS OF SPECIES CHANGE..... 57

Insisting on a Common Ancestor: Biology’s Tree..... 58

Species Change 65

Is Genesis History? Documentary Highlights & Commentary: Biology (on Transitional Species)..... 74

Dr. Carl Werner Creationism Intro & Highlights on Lack of Transitional Fossils 77

God's Incredible Adaptation Machine: Part 1 (Epigenetics, DNA Switches, Loosening & Tightening) by Dr. Robert Wright 78

God's Incredible Adaptation Machine: Part 2 (Adapting without New Genetic Info, Environment Changes Gene Expression, Transgenerational Epigenetics, Data is Lost Not Gained, Selective Breeding is Data Loss) by Dr. Robert Wright 83

Adaptation Not Evolution (Deceptive Evolution Rhetoric, Micro/Macro Fallacy) by Dr. Robert Wright..... 88

Whales: The “Fox-Like Stepping Stone to Whales” Narrative Is Classic Evolutionary Overreach by Dr. Robert Wright 91

Whales: More Evidence on Whales Not Evolving, Creation, Homology Assumptions, & Jonah by Dr. Robert Wright..... 94

When a Horse is Not a Horse by Dr. Robert Wright 99

PART 5: THE APE-MAN HOAX 103

Human-Like Ancestors? 104

98% Similar DNA Claim..... 110

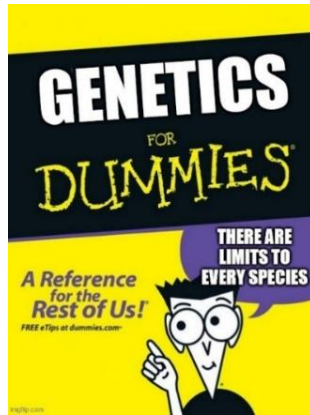
The general lack of ‘hominid’ fossils..... 110

Ardi hominid claim 111

Lucy (Australopithecus) hominid claim.....	113
Homo Habilis hominid claim.....	116
Neanderthal hominid claim.....	117
Who's Related to Who? (Man Completely Separate from Ape) By Dr. Robert Wright	120
Highlighting Henry Morris Scientific Creationism Ch. 7 Apes or Man	128
PART 6: ADAM: THE DIRECT CREATION OF IMMORTAL MAN IN THE BEGINNING IN GOD'S IMAGE AS GOD'S DIRECT LINEAL OFFSPRING	131
The Complete 1909 First Presidency Statement: The Origin of Man, "The Church's Doctrinal Position on These Matters", as Reprinted in the 2002 Ensign Church Magazine	131
Adam: First Man	137
Adam: Literal Progeny of God (Not Hominid).....	141
The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil: Symbol, Shadow, and Stone (On Both Literal and Symbolic Meanings to Eden & The Fall, Doctrinal & Scientific) by Dr. Robert Wright	147
Two Adams in Genesis by Edwin Goble (Synchronizing Teachings from the Restoration & Ancient Religions on The Natural Fatherhood of God in Eden & The First Man as a Direct Descendant of God)....	157
Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 2: The Garden of Eden (& Pre-Flood Conditions) – Highlights & Commentary.....	217
PART 7: EDEN, THE FALL, & THE ENTRANCE OF DEATH INTO THE WORLD	232
No Death Before The Fall: Plain & Precious Teachings Opposing Evolutionary Origins	232
The Intended Path (Expelling the Devil's Lie that there was "No Other Way" in Eden, Against Contrary Commandments) by Dr. Robert Wright.....	246
On the Tree of Knowledge & The Fall: Essay by Dr. Robert Wright: Literal & Symbolic Meanings, Doctrinal & Scientific.....	250



PART 1: DNA & GENETICS



Introductory DNA & Homology Science



On page 53 in LTSR’s DNA discussion, the authors bring up that when 2 organisms both have a fluorescent protein put into them, that they will both glow, “because all life on earth, including humans, read DNA that way.” Then they make the following extrapolation, “This is strong evidence that we all shared a common beginning.” The more obvious conclusion would be that living things were made by the same designer with similar blueprints.

Similarities don’t prove evolution. For example, cell phones and humans can both detect light, understand language, recharge via a long cord (intestines for digestion) and so forth; does this mean we descended from a shared ancestor with the cell phone?

DNA similarities between one creature and another are irrelevant—it is the differences that count. The differences are such that no two species will ever accidentally mutate into a different species than what the DNA specifically codes for. DNA puts definite limits on how much a species can adapt, and this is against

evolution and favors creation by a Designer who wasn't relying on natural selection, the heart of evolutionary theory.

DNA differences are dramatic and unexplained. For even one gene to evolve by natural selection, it would take longer than the entire timeframe given by mainstream scientists. Genetics have proven that there are limits to how much a species can change, limits are set.

“Junk DNA” or non-coding genomic regions, has been claimed in the past by some as the best evidence of Darwinian evolution. (Bob Enyart Debates Ph.D. Eugenie Scott <http://kgov.com/journal-nature-junk-dna-not-junk-bob-enyart-vs-eugenie-scott>) The “junk DNA” argument appears to be evaporating. Douglas Axe reported on the **challenges of random mutations being responsible for the origins** of functional protein folding in his publication in 2004 in the journal *Science Direct*. (*Estimating the Prevalence of Protein Sequences Adopting Functional Enzyme Folds* <http://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0022283604007624>) According to **Axe's** experiments, “the overall prevalence of sequences performing a specific function by any domain-sized fold may be as low as 1 in 10^{77} .” For a comparison of that number, there are believed to be 10^{80} sub-atomic particles in the entire Universe. According to his research, relying on random processes to beget “de novo” proteins is out of the realm of statistical possibility regardless of the billions of years that one could imagine.

Scientists have also found that parents of the entire human race existed only a few thousand years ago: “If molecular evolution is really neutral at these sites, a high mutation rate would indicate that Eve lived about 6500 years ago – a figure clearly incompatible with current theories on human origins.” (**Mitochondrial Eve, TREE**, vol. 12, No. 11, November 1997, p422) The Nature Journal echoed these facts when it said, “Simulations based on a model of human population history and geography find that an individual that is the genealogical ancestor of all living humans existed just a few thousand years ago.” (**John Hein**, Nature, 30 September 2004, p518) If you don't need tens of thousands of years to find the original humans, those years probably do not exist!

Some boast genetic similarities of chimps and humans. This is an old evolution talking point which hides the reality that a doghouse and a skyscraper also share a similar high genetic similarity, as do bananas and humans, etc. Similarity doesn't prove common ancestry, and vast differences are brushed under the rug.

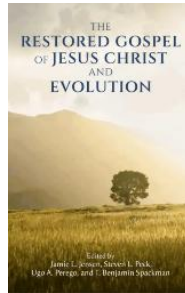
Stephen Meyer in “Darwin’s Doubt” summarizes limits of Neo-Darwinism’s genetic claims as follows:

- "1. Neo-Darwinism has no means of efficiently searching available combination space for functional genes and proteins and consequently
2. It requires unrealistically long waiting times to generate even a single new Gene or protein, and the new mechanism cannot produce body plans because
3. Early acting mutations, the only kind capable of generating large-scale changes, are also invariably deleterious and
4. Genetic mutations cannot in any case generate the epigenetic information necessary to build a body plan."

Meyer also makes these stirring points against evolution’s genetic claims in “Darwin’s Doubt” as follows:

1. Mendel showed that Darwin's idea of blended inheritance is not correct. The discoveries of Mendel posed many problems for Darwin's theory.
2. Richard Dawkins had a computer program re-create a phrase, but this does not really mirror natural selection because **natural selection isn't given a phrase to look for.**
3. Evolutionists make claims about genes evolving that are as unsupported as alchemists' claims about lead turning into gold.
4. Evolutionists make claims about gene mutation very similar to taking a book, rearranging its paragraphs randomly, changing the spelling of words, reordering the page number, the page arrangement etc., and expecting a more advanced book to be made from this random process.
5. Given Earth's currently assigned age, there is not enough time for one single gene to evolve, much less an entire series of evolutions that make animals and humans.
6. Evolutionists come up with wildly imaginative scenarios and on the rare occasion when they attempt to put them to the test, the tests fail.
7. The types of mutations that do occur are not those required by macroevolution.
8. The types of mutations that do occur are not the types of mutations required by macroevolution.
9. There is no sufficient variation, which means there can be no sufficient selection, which means there can be no evolution of species.
10. Microevolution observed in nature only explains the survival of the fittest, not the arrival of the fittest.

Genetic Blunders in the 2025 “The Restored Gospel of Jesus Christ & Evolution” Book



The 2025 book “The Restored Gospel of Jesus Christ & Evolution” by Jensen & others has full of genetics issues. Dr. Robert Wright explains:

- Chapters such as “Wonderful Forms of Life Have Been and Are Being Evolved” (Kummer and Jensen) **define evolution broadly** to include natural selection, mutation, and allele shifts (for example, *antibiotic resistance and skin pigmentation*). These are presented as proof of ongoing evolutionary change. This is **deceptive rhetoric**. Peer-reviewed analyses show such changes involve **sorting, loss, or minor shuffling** of **pre-existing** genetic information **within created kinds**. **No novel, functional information is generated**. John C. Sanford’s foundational work on genetic entropy demonstrates that **mutations overwhelmingly degrade genomes over time**. **Natural selection cannot prevent the accumulation of near-neutral deleterious mutations**. This leads to **inevitable decline** rather than upward evolution.
- The book’s examples **fit the Biblical** model of **rapid post-Flood adaptation** from **Ark-derived genetic richness (high initial heterozygosity followed by bottlenecks)**. They do **not support Darwinian transformation**. Claiming these as evolution is classic **equivocation** designed to imply common descent without evidence of the required information increase.

The genetics issues continue with the macro/micro evolution fallacy. Dr. Robert Wright explains:

- The volume **dismisses the micro/macro distinction**. It asserts macroevolution is simply the large-scale result of many microevolutionary events differing only in scale.
- This is a scientifically bankrupt assertion **refuted by information theory and empirical limits**. Peer-reviewed modeling (for example, Sanford's Mendel's Accountant simulations) shows that even with generous parameters, **populations cannot accumulate the millions of coordinated mutations needed** for new complex systems.
- **Instead, genomes decay. Mutations** are overwhelmingly **deleterious or neutral. Beneficial ones are rare and trivial**.
- **No peer-reviewed study has documented the origin of a single new functional gene or protein fold via unguided processes.** This is precisely what macroevolution demands.

Their human evolution genetics claims also stink. Dr. Robert Wright explains:

- The book's treatment of human evolution (Bybee's chapter) is particularly weak.
- It cites **outdated 98 percent** human-chimp similarity. Recent full-genome comparisons, accounting for indels, **structural variants, and non-aligned regions**, reveal only about **85 percent** overall similarity. This is devastating to common-ancestry claims.
- The alleged *chromosome 2 fusion* (supposed evidence of human-chimp divergence) has been **refuted**. The **purported fusion site is a functional promoter** in the DDX11L2 gene. The **alleged cryptic centromere lacks expected telomeric repeats or inactivation signatures**. Peer-reviewed genomic data show it is **not a fusion scar but designed sequence**.

Their genetics for Adam as a humanoid don't work either. Dr. Robert Wright explains:

- The volume's concordist or theistic-evolution framing, that Adam and Eve may have been pre-Adamite humanoids advanced enough for covenant relationship while bodies evolved, lacks any empirical support and **contradicts genetic data**.
- Human **genetic diversity is far too low for a multi-million-year** evolutionary history. It **fits a recent origin** from a **small founding**

population (Noah's family) with rapid post-Babel diversification.

- Pre-Adamite populations would **require unobserved massive genetic bottlenecks and impossible mutation rates without genetic entropy** overwhelming the lineage.
- The hypothesis also **fails to explain the sudden appearance of fully modern human behavior, art, and technology** in the archaeological record with **no evolutionary precursors**.

Nor do their fossil claims help their case. Dr. Robert Wright explains:

- Fossil claims fare no better. The book **implies a smooth progression** from ape-like ancestors.
- In reality, **after 150 plus years** of searching, paleoanthropologists have **only fragmentary remains** (fewer than 2,000 specimens) with **no clear intermediates**.
- **Proposed links are routinely reclassified as fully ape or fully human.**

(And their 'specimens' are typically tiny fragments of a highly questionable nature.)

Dr. Jeff Tomkins, PhD Geneticist: These New Discoveries About DNA CONFIRM God Is Real – Lecture Highlights

(The following are highlights as I perceived them and which stood out to me and do not represent the views of the author.)

<https://youtu.be/bKQOlsZNYak?si=XBxcA3z6PZfu0rFI>

Some of the human genome doesn't sequence for proteins so they thought it was junk DNA evolutionary leftover but now we're finding all of that is very important like metadata. They came up with these ideas before we had sequenced the human genome and now we know better.

Encyclopedia of DNA elements aka encode project prove the entire genome is useful There's no junk DNA

From end to end it is full of information doing important things

The evolutionist idea of random evolution and spitting out new sequences is impossible There's no available space to do this as they once thought

6m

Genetic variants were built into Adam and Eve. Same with Noah.

Some errors enter the genome, but usually they are repaired. Real mutations don't do good things, they don't help us evolve. Genetics doesn't support genome evolution, genetics supports entropy, devolution. Human health and longevity goes down.

Africa has the most genetic diversity. After the flood people could go into Asia or Africa. The upper part of the world was covered in a post-flood ice age. Most genetic diversity is in Asia and Africa.

Skin color isn't a simple trait, many genes are involved. Polygenic. 100s of genes influence different colors. Original variation could have been in Adam and Eve, and later in Noah.

The people groups come from the Tower of Babel.

After the flood people were commanded to spread out and repopulated. They didn't, they stayed in one place and built the pagan idolatrous structure of the tower, and the languages were confused. The Bible says about 70 nations/people groups happened. Linguistics we see basically 70 groups. Genetics also shows some 70 groups.

Confused language lead to who people could marry, thus came different people groups.

Genetic diversity can happen quickly.

Mitochondria have their own piece of about 16k DNA letter nucleotides, you inherit them from your mother. The variation of this mitochondrial genome is only about 7000 years old based on the variation we see. Theoretical evolutionists pushed back when an evolutionist published this data. Creationist scientists have come up with the same data.

The Y chromosome, Dr. Nathaniel Jeanson at Answers in Genesis, shows that Y chromosome data variation goes back to the global flood and Noah's 3 sons. 3 main branches of the Y chromosome. A genetic bottleneck. Jeanson also saw 3 main branches of the mitochondrial genome going back to the flood.

Conventional (not creationist) scientists looked at human exomes, the autosomes, the protein coding sequences of the genome, and they saw the variation in exomes, based on population reproduction rate models, and published that the human genome is no older than 5k-10k years old. Publications in America and Europe show this.

Mutations show the human genome is only 5k-10k years old.

21m

Race:

There aren't races, there are people groups. Race is an idea from Darwin. Don't even use the word race.

Darwin didn't just write the original species. He wrote another book on human evolution from apes and superiority of some races over others. (The book is titled The descent of Man)

Darwin and his whole movement are inherently racist and the eugenics movement came from Darwinism.

Every supposedly different race is of the one race the human race. We can all interbreed we are not separate species.

It's possible that breeding across different people groups mixing them can increase genetic diversity and be healthier.

25m

Genetic bottleneck:

A genetic bottleneck is almost never a good thing. It's where you get a small group that tries to rebuild itself.

Before the flood there was probably more diversity of animals as they did not go through a genetic bottleneck as happened with the flood.

The arc is actually quite big there could have been room for several types of cats etc. He believes there are multiple different cat kinds that would have been brought on the ark etc. But the diversity was reduced at the flood.

Lifespan after the flood dropped dramatically, it could be in part due to a loss of genetic diversity.

Note: some have suggested different atmosphere gas contents pre-flood versus post-flood as one reason for shorter lifespans after the flood, or even something to do with a loss of a canopy of water in the firmament as the Bible suggests. Maybe that's all part of it. But this loss of genetic diversity argument is huge. This could

be a very clear and winning argument for the shorter post flood lifespans of both man and beast. End note.

When populations are overly isolated and inbreeding occurs genetic diversity decreases and problems result. Like happened with the Florida panther recently.

28m

The law of Moses against marrying a close relative was inspired and scientific. Before that time closer to the flood there wouldn't have been as much of a need for that restriction genetically.

Dr Jake Hamber is doing research showing that pre-flood animals lived longer or larger and matured slower.

The pre-flood World likely had higher oxygen content higher air pressure etc. that promoted life.

There were many more plants before the flood than we have now.

The diversity of sea life is much more diverse than land life because they weren't limited during the flood.

Pre-flood creatures like the Canadian starfish and horseshoe crab they look exactly the same as the ones that live today. They haven't evolved at all.

35m

Mutations:

Thousands of human genomes have been sequenced.

Mutations are associated with disease They aren't helping us.

Before we knew anything about genetics the law of Moses gave us instructions against Mary and close relatives. This instruction came a few thousand years after the creation and has been very preventative.

38m

Genetic entropy

Program Mendel's accountant prove that based on evolution paradigms their timeline for human evolution doesn't work. The program was made by a evolutionist geneticist who became a Christian creationist When shown the undeniable evidence.

Human exomes and mutations in protein coding regions and demographic data about population growth rates etc. show the genome is no more than 5000 to 10,000 years old.

Junk DNA

They thought the non-protein coding regions of the genome were free to do whatever they wanted and mutate but not so. It actually is functional.

In the 1960s they found DNA that was not protein coding and they didn't know what it did so they assumed it was junk.

The genome is not neutral there's no room for evolution.

43m

Non-coding regions are essential for human health

2 to 3 long non coding genes than coding genes. Some regulate gene expression. Some regulate DNA structure. Some keep telomeres stable. Lots of functions in and out of the nucleus. Sometimes they work with proteins. Some sent to other parts of the body in exosomes. An entire RNA ecosystem that needs more than just protein coding genes. They regulate the protein coding regions like metadata.

Evolutionists are a minority, bio medical NIH mostly funds practical research, not hypothetical. It's discovery based. These researchers don't claim to be creationists but they're proving design, and evolutionists are accusing them of being creationists. The NSF (National Science Foundation) does fund the theoretical.

Scientific Discoveries Favoring Creation over Evolution with Dr. Nathaniel Jeanson on Genetics Etc. – Lecture Highlights

From YouTube Channel Biblical Studies & Reviews, Stephen Hackett 57min - <https://youtu.be/DYm6uV3Iylg?si=ZTY7q1JBekQtkrBd>

Theistic evolution and atheistic evolution are the same thing. They use the same time scales in the same methods the same natural selection. Theistic evolution just pretends to have God mystically standing in the sidelines clapping. (Neither

theory really requires God at all. The obvious fact is if you don't need God to explain the creation God probably doesn't exist.)

Even if it were true that we have 98% similar DNA If you estimate our DNA as about 3 billion letters that's still 60 million letters different. It's a psychological tactic to say 2% different to make it seem like very similar.

And there's big chunks of chimp DNA and human DNA that don't line up at all that aren't included in analysis of similarities.

And focusing on DNA similarities is purely materialistic and doesn't appropriately put into perspective the difference between chimps and humans. Chimps don't send spaceships to the moon. We are extremely different from chips.

Bio logos is an organization pushing evolution which is Christian. But they've had to admit that Adam and Eve must not be real because evolution never allows for two first humans. Evolution calls for lots of early humans.

There's no ambiguous transitional forms they're either monkeys or humans.

The flood is evidenced by marine fossils on mountaintops and continent-wide layers. There's a lot of evidence of these layers being laid down quickly.

Neanderthals look like humans. They just have a little more variety than modern humans. This could be from the long-lived peoples described near the time of the flood which is where Neanderthals are found. What look like more modern humans these are the post flood people.

Creationists are now on the offense not just the defense we're finding a lot of things that prove a young earth.

Genetics wasn't even discovered at the time of Darwin He never uses the word genetics in his book.

Genetics do support several families of created animals, genetics do not support a common ancestor of all animals.

See Dr Nathaniel Jeanson's book "Traced."

[The Genetic Clock They Ignore by Dr. Robert Wright](https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-genetic-clock-they-ignore)

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-genetic-clock-they-ignore>

Observed DNA Mutation Rates Confirm the Biblical Timeline

At The Flood Museum, we present the physical evidence God has preserved across the earth, from sedimentary layers to ancient artifacts, that consistently affirms the historical accuracy of Scripture. One of the clearest testimonies comes from within our own cells: the human genome. Mainstream science’s model of slow DNA mutation rates is carefully calibrated to support an old-earth, evolutionary timeline spanning hundreds of thousands of years. Yet this model directly contradicts the actual observed evidence from pedigree studies. In an effort to deny the Biblical record of a recent creation (~6,000 years ago) and a global Flood (~4,500 years ago), many researchers ignore or downplay the faster mutation rates measured in real families. When examined honestly, the data from mutation rates, genetic markers of population interactions, *and* the environmental catastrophe of the Flood itself align precisely with Genesis.

Mainstream Science’s Molecular Clock: **Built on Assumption, Not Observation**

Evolutionary biologists date human origins to 200,000–300,000 years ago using “molecular clocks,” estimates of how quickly mutations accumulate. These clocks rely almost exclusively on *phylogenetic* rates: slow averages inferred from assumed deep-time divergences (such as the chimp-human split millions of years ago) and calibrated against the fossil record. This approach is circular: it assumes the very evolutionary history it claims to prove.

Direct pedigree studies—sequencing parents and children to count new mutations, tell a dramatically different story. Large-scale analyses consistently report ~60–100 new single-nucleotide variants (SNVs) per generation, with some recent multi-generation studies confirming 98–206 de novo mutations per transmission. These are not theoretical; they are counted in living families.

If humans had existed for 200,000+ years (~8,000–12,000 generations at 25 years each), the observed rate would produce *millions* of accumulated mutations per person. The result would be genetic meltdown, exactly what Dr. John Sanford describes in *Genetic Entropy*. Most mutations are neutral or slightly harmful. Natural selection cannot efficiently remove them. Over deep time, the genome would deteriorate rapidly. Humanity’s continued health and function are incompatible with such long ages. The Biblical timeline of ~240 generations since Creation produces precisely the variation we observe today.

Mitochondrial and Y-Chromosome Clocks Reset to Biblical Timescales

Mitochondrial DNA (passed only through mothers) and the Y-chromosome (passed only through fathers) function as precise genetic clocks. Pedigree studies reveal mtDNA mutation rates 10–20 times faster than phylogenetic estimates.

When the actual rates are applied, “Mitochondrial Eve,” the most recent common maternal ancestor—dates to roughly 6,000 years ago, matching the creation of Adam and Eve in Genesis 1–2 and 3.

The Y-chromosome provides even clearer confirmation. High-coverage sequences and pedigree-based mutation rates (approximately 2–3 mutations per generation) show the entire diversity of human paternal lineages traces back to a single ancestor just ~4,500 years ago, exactly the time of Noah’s three sons after the Flood (Genesis 9–10). All modern men descend from these three paternal lines, consistent with the genetic bottleneck of only eight survivors described in Genesis 6–9.

Mainstream responses to these data typically involve rejecting the faster pedigree rates or claiming “selection effects” without evidence. The motivation is clear: faster clocks collapse the old-earth timeline and affirm Scripture.

The Flood’s Magnetic Catastrophe: Accelerated Mutations Confirm a Young Earth

Further powerful confirmation comes from the global Flood itself. Creation physicist Dr. D. Russell Humphreys has demonstrated through rigorous physical modeling that the catastrophic plate tectonics and upheaval during the Flood (Genesis 7:11) stirred the electrically conductive fluid in Earth’s outer core. This produced dozens of rapid magnetic field reversals, sometimes as frequently as every week or two, along with a dramatic overall decline in field strength.

Earth’s magnetic field acts as a protective shield against harmful cosmic rays and solar radiation. During these reversals and the accompanying weakening, that shield collapsed significantly, allowing far greater penetration of radiation to the earth’s surface. Cosmic radiation is a primary cause of DNA damage and mutations. In the immediate post-Flood world, with only eight human survivors repopulating the planet, this surge in radiation would have dramatically *accelerated* mutation rates, precisely the elevated rates now measured in modern pedigree studies.

Once the magnetic field restabilized at its present (much weaker) strength, mutation rates moderated to today’s observed levels. This temporary post-Flood spike explains the rapid accumulation of genetic diversity we see worldwide in just 4,500 years, without any need for millions of years of slow change. It perfectly reconciles the high observed mutation rates with the Biblical timeline while exposing the flaw in mainstream assumptions of constant rates over deep time.

Genetic Markers and Population Interactions: Evidence of Flood Bottleneck and Babel Dispersion

Human genetic diversity is strikingly low for a species claimed to be hundreds of thousands of years old. This pattern matches a severe population bottleneck followed by explosive diversification, precisely as recorded in Genesis.

The global Flood reduced humanity to Noah's family of eight. Population genetics models show this bottleneck explains the limited overall variation we see worldwide. Shortly afterward, the confusion of languages at Babel (Genesis 11) triggered rapid migration and isolation of groups. Genetic markers confirm this:

- Major Y-chromosome and mtDNA haplogroups branch in patterns that align with the "Table of Nations" in Genesis 10.
- Ancient DNA from the Bronze Age reveals a sudden influx of genetic diversity ~5,000–4,500 years ago, matching post-Flood repopulation.
- Admixture events and global migration signatures, when dated with real mutation rates (further accelerated by Flood-related radiation), fit comfortably within a few thousand years.

Using observed rates and realistic generation times, the genetic distances between populations reflect rapid spread across continents after Babel, not tens of thousands of years of slow isolation. Mainstream models must invent additional ancient bottlenecks or invoke mysteriously slow mutation rates to force-fit the data into deep time. The Biblical sequence of Creation → Flood bottleneck (with magnetic-radiation spike) → Babel dispersion requires no such adjustments.

Why the Evidence Is Ignored: A Commitment to Deep Time

The discrepancy between observed pedigree mutation rates, the Flood-induced radiation spike, and the slower rates needed for old-earth models is well-documented. Yet many researchers continue to prioritize phylogenetic assumptions over direct measurements and physical evidence from Earth's own magnetic history. This is not science operating in a vacuum; it is driven by a philosophical commitment to deny the historical reliability of Genesis. As the Apostle Paul warned in Romans 1:20–25, when people suppress the clear evidence of God in creation, they exchange the truth for a lie.

The Biblical Timeline Fits the Data Perfectly

When we begin with God's Word, the genetic evidence comes alive with clarity. The observed mutation rates, the recent dates for our most recent common

ancestors, the low overall diversity, the explosive population markers, *and* the magnetic-field collapse caused by the Flood all converge on the same conclusion: humanity is young, the Flood was real and recent, and the dispersion from Babel produced the peoples of the earth exactly as Moses recorded.

The DNA in your body is not ancient evolutionary history, it is living testimony to the faithfulness of God’s Word. Just as Noah’s Ark preserved life through judgment, the genetic record preserved through the Flood (and its magnetic consequences) points us back to the Creator who designed it all.

References

Porubsky, David, et al. “Human de novo Mutation Rates from a Four-Generation Pedigree Reference.” *Nature*, April 23, 2025. <https://doi.org/10.1038/s41586-025-08922-2>.

Jeanson, Nathaniel T., and Ashley D. Holland. “Evidence for a Human Y Chromosome Molecular Clock: Pedigree-Based Mutation Rates Suggest a 4,500-Year History for Human Paternal Inheritance.” *Answers Research Journal* 12 (2019): 393–404.

Sanford, John C. *Genetic Entropy*. 4th ed. Lima, NY: FMS Publications, 2014.

Jeanson, Nathaniel T. “On the Origin of Human Mitochondrial DNA Differences, New Generation Time Data Both Suggest a Unified Young-Earth Creation Model and Challenge the Evolutionary Out-of-Africa Model.” *Answers Research Journal* 9 (2016): 123–130.

Carter, Robert W. “The Genetic Effects of the Population Bottleneck Associated with the Genesis Flood.” *Creation* 41, no. 2 (2019): 48–52.

Humphreys, D. Russell. “Physical Mechanism for Reversals of the Earth’s Magnetic Field During the Flood.” *Proceedings of the Second International Conference on Creationism* 2 (1991): 129–142.

Institute for Creation Research. “Earth’s Magnetic Field.” Accessed March 2026. <https://www.icr.org/content/earths-magnetic-field>.

The Holy Bible, English Standard Version. Wheaton, IL: Crossway, 2001.

PART 2: MICROBIOLOGICAL DESIGN: **ASTONISHINGLY COMPLEX MACHINES**

Held Together by Design: Laminin and the Wonder of God's Creative Hand by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/held-together-by-design>

Laminin and the Wonder of God's Creative Hand

If you have spent any time exploring the intricate details of living systems, you have likely encountered laminin. This remarkable family of proteins sits at the heart of the extracellular matrix, particularly in the thin, specialized sheets known as basement membranes that underlie nearly every tissue in the body. Laminins help cells adhere, migrate, proliferate, and differentiate. Without them, tissues lose integrity. Embryonic development falters. Wounds struggle to heal. In short, laminin is one of the key molecular “scaffolds” that holds our bodies together.

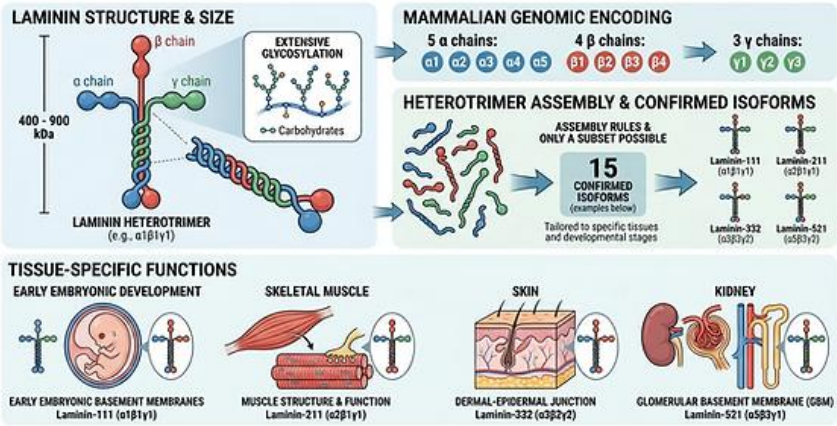
Many have noticed something striking about its structure. When visualized by electron microscopy after rotary shadowing, a laminin molecule appears as an asymmetrical cross: three shorter arms extending outward and one longer arm. Early structural studies in the 1980s revealed this cruciform shape, and subsequent crystallography and cryo-electron microscopy have filled in atomic detail. The three short arms are formed by the N-terminal regions of the α , β , and γ chains, each tipped by a globular laminin N-terminal (LN) domain. The long arm is an α -helical coiled-coil formed by all three chains, ending in a cluster of laminin G-like (LG) domains on the α chain.

That visual resemblance to a cross has captured attention, and understandably so. It invites reflection on Colossians 1:15–17, where Paul writes of Christ: “He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation. For by him all things were created, in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible... And he is before all things, and in him all things hold together.” The parallel is evocative. Yet the deeper wonder of laminin lies not merely in a two-dimensional silhouette, but in the concrete engineering principles that make this molecule function with such precision. Those principles point us toward the intentional, purposeful acts of a Creator whose wisdom is displayed in the living world.

The Architecture of a Molecular Scaffold

Laminins are large heterotrimeric glycoproteins, typically ranging from roughly 400 to 900 kDa depending on the isoform and the extensive glycosylation that occurs after translation. Mammalian genomes encode five α chains, four β chains, and three γ chains. Only a subset of the theoretically possible combinations actually assemble into functional heterotrimers, about fifteen confirmed isoforms. Each isoform is tailored to specific tissues and developmental stages. Laminin-111 ($\alpha1\beta1\gamma1$), for example, is prominent in early embryonic basement membranes, while others dominate in muscle, skin, or kidney.

LAMININ BIOLOGY: STRUCTURE, ASSEMBLY, AND TISSUE SPECIFICITY



The chains do not simply stick together randomly. They associate through a long coiled-coil domain stabilized by disulfide bonds. The short arms contain tandem arrays of laminin-type epidermal growth factor-like (LE) domains interspersed with additional globular regions. These short arms mediate self-assembly. The LN domains at their tips interact in a highly specific, calcium-dependent manner: one α , one β , and one γ LN domain come together to form a polymer node. Recent cryo-electron microscopy structures have shown this node as a near-symmetrical triskelion, with the domains arranged heel-to-toe. Mutations that disrupt these interfaces cause serious human disorders known as LN-lamininopathies, including certain congenital muscular dystrophies and Pierson syndrome.

The long arm, by contrast, reaches toward the cell surface. Its LG domains bind integrins, α -dystroglycan, heparan sulfates, and other receptors. Through these interactions laminin transmits both mechanical and biochemical signals, influencing cell behavior while anchoring the cell to the surrounding matrix. Nidogen and perlecan further cross-link the laminin network to the collagen IV network, integrating the entire basement membrane into a resilient yet adaptable sheet.

This is not a simple “glue.” It is a modular, multi-domain system whose parts are specialized yet interdependent. The molecule must fold correctly, assemble with the right partners, polymerize under precise ionic conditions, and present the correct binding surfaces at the correct times and places. The information required for all of this is encoded in the genes for the individual chains, regulated by tissue-specific expression programs, and executed by cellular machinery that synthesizes, modifies, secretes, and organizes the proteins outside the cell.

The Miraculous Nature of Biological Systems

Consider what must occur for even one basement membrane to form properly during embryonic development. Cells must produce the correct laminin isoforms in the correct ratios. The chains must find one another and form the heterotrimer. The molecules must be secreted in a coordinated way. They must then self-assemble into a continuous lattice while simultaneously engaging cell-surface receptors. All of this happens while neighboring cells are proliferating, migrating, and differentiating according to their own tightly controlled programs. Disrupt any major step and the embryo fails.

This level of integrated complexity is characteristic of living systems. It is the same kind of engineering we see when we examine the molecular machines of the cell, the ribosome, the ATP synthase rotary motor, the DNA replication and repair systems. Each component is itself information-rich. Each interacts with others according to specified interfaces. The whole system functions only when the parts are present in the right forms, at the right times, in the right places. Such systems do not arise by the gradual accumulation of undirected changes. They reflect foresight, planning, and purpose.

We often return to this theme: the living world is filled with structures whose form and function declare the glory of their Maker. Psalm 139:13–14 reminds us that we are “fearfully and wonderfully made.” The same God who knit us together in the womb also established the molecular architecture that keeps tissues intact day after day. Laminin’s ability to polymerize into a resilient network while simultaneously signaling to cells is one more illustration of that careful craftsmanship.

Romans 1:20 tells us that God’s invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly perceived in the things that have been made. Laminin is one of those things. Its cross-like outline may serve as a visual reminder, but the more profound testimony is the functional design itself: the precise domain architecture, the calcium-dependent polymerization logic, the receptor-binding specificity, and the developmental regulation that deploys the right isoforms

where they are needed. These are concrete scientific realities that align with the biblical portrait of a Creator who works with wisdom and intention.

Christ Who Holds All Things Together

Paul's words in Colossians remain true whether or not any particular molecule resembles a cross. Christ is the One through whom and for whom all things were created. He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. The physical cohesion provided by laminin and the rest of the extracellular matrix is a secondary, created means. The ultimate sustaining power belongs to the Son of God, who upholds the universe by the word of His power (Hebrews 1:3).

We see this same sustaining reality at an even more fundamental level in the phenomenon known as zero-point energy, or ZPE. As I have discussed in detail in the discussion "[The Invisible Power Sustaining Creation](#)," ZPE is the baseline energy present in the quantum vacuum, the very fabric of what we call "empty" space, even at absolute zero temperature. Far from being nothing, this pervasive energy field continually imparts the precise impulses needed to keep electrons in stable orbits, preventing the collapse of atoms that classical electromagnetism would otherwise predict. Without this invisible, all-pervading energy sea, matter itself could not endure for even a fraction of a second.

What science describes as zero-point energy appears, from a biblical perspective, as a physical manifestation of the sustaining power and "light" of Christ that fills all space. The same Lord who stabilizes the quantum vacuum and holds electrons in their paths is the One who designed laminin to hold our tissues together. Both testify that creation is not self-sustaining. It is upheld moment by moment by the word of His power.

That truth brings hope. Our bodies are temporary and subject to the effects of the Fall. Laminin mutations can bring suffering. Tissues age and weaken. Yet the same Lord who designed the molecular scaffolds that hold us together in this life, and who maintains the very atoms of which we are made, is the One who will one day raise us in incorruptible bodies. The cross of Christ is not primarily a shape found in a protein diagram. It is the place where the Creator entered His creation, bore our sin, and secured our redemption.

When we look at laminin, then, we can rightly marvel at both the silhouette and the substance. The cruciform outline is interesting. The engineering that makes the molecule work is astonishing. Together with the deeper testimony of zero-point energy, they invite us to worship the God who formed the heavens and the earth, who designed the living systems that fill them, and who continues to hold all things, visible and invisible, in the hollow of His hand.

Darwin's Black Box Book by Biochemist Michael Behe PhD (On The Cell, Irreducible Complexity of Molecular Machines, Lack of Transitional Forms, Insufficiency of Natural Selection) - Highlights & Commentary



Introductory Note: This was an excellent book demonstrating the complexity of biological systems, and how absurd it would be to believe that they evolved by chance natural selection. Biological organisms were clearly created. They are far more complex than cars, and no one would claim that the car evolved by natural selection. My notes and commentary on this work represent a very small portion of the ideas from the book, and are put forth in my own words.

Also check out Behe's video course on Intelligent Design & Evolution: [Course | Michael J. Behe \(michaelbehe.com\)](https://www.michaelbehe.com)

Note: The author starts the book by saying that he's ready to accept a very old Earth. This, of course, is a critical flaw in his analysis. Abundant evidence indicates a young Earth and, therefore, the impossibility of evolution theory.

Behe Black Box Ch.'s 1-2 The Box is Opened

Darwin could not see microbiology. He knew that the eye was for seeing, but he did not know how it saw. He did not have answers to these questions. **The cell is Darwin's Black box.** He had no clue how it worked.

Here is a brilliant analogy of what evolutionists claim with their millions of years of evolution from a common ancestor, of which there is no evidence. If

your friend says he jumped over a couple of feet, you believe him. If he says he jumped across 10 or 15 feet, you are skeptical and surprised. If he says he jumped across the Grand Canyon, you don't believe him. Then he claims that it took him years to do it, and that there were buttes which he stood on in the canyon, which took a long time to appear, and which went away quickly after he had jumped. It's absurd. **Someone who claims that they made many small jumps to get across a large chasm in the past, but that the things that jumped on are no longer there, is very hard to believe.** (*Note: Truly, evolution is a system of belief, aka faith. End note.*) Evolution makes **huge leaps** for which there is **no evidence**. There are **unbridgeable chasms even at the smallest levels of life**.

Darwin had to convince people that complex organisms could be made slowly.

The eye and vision were another black box for Darwin. He and his contemporaries had no clue how it worked. What he thought was simple is extremely complex, involving many proteins, enzymes, etc., multiple systems going at once. These aren't just leap to leap, these are huge distances.

Darwinism explains micro-evolution well (like the change in a bird's beak length over generations), but it is **a farce to use it to explain the origins of life and species** (like humans coming from sponges), the main point that Darwin was getting at.

Little kids think a **box can be an airplane** (think Calvin & Hobbes) **because they don't know** how the airplane works. There are scientists now taking a similar approach about evolution and the origin of life!



Scientists used to think that cultures growing in a liquid could spontaneously generate because the flies appeared to appear on meat spontaneously. The key problem was to think that the flies and the cultures were extremely simple. A similar problem exists with the evolution of complex organs like the human eye. Darwin made it seem very simple, but it is not.

Neo-Darwinism was created by various sciences deciding what to do with the theory of evolution. This all came out before biochemistry. **Now that we have biochemistry, Neo-Darwinism must be revisited, as biochemistry debunks it.**

Darwinism is **becoming less popular** within and outside of the scientific community due to the many questions the theory cannot answer. Scientists admit that the theoretical framework and evidence for neo-Darwinism are weak.

Note: I heard a recent case of an evolutionist, calculating how to promote evolution acceptance, who came up against the problem that the more people know about evolution, the less likely they are to accept the theory.

There appears to have been a biological 'Big Bang,' with many species coming on scene at once.

Note: the "Cambrian Explosion" in the fossil record of advanced lifeforms appearing is from the flood of Noah, wiping out many animals and fossilizing them in a unique environment able to convert bone into rock, something that isn't happening today.

Mathematicians insist that even with current dates of how old the Earth might be, that's not nearly enough time for claimed evolutionary changes in species.

Evolutionists are upset that:

1. There are **no transitional forms** and
2. That **species have different but very definite limits** as to how much they can change and
3. That **systems appear suddenly** and
4. That **natural selection cannot account for the diversity** of life.

There have always been well-informed, respected scientists who find Darwinism to be inadequate.

Most scientists will say they believe Darwinism, but they believe it based on authority, based on what others have said.

Scientists are afraid to debate natural selection, which is ironically unscientific. True science doesn't fear scrutiny, challenge, and debate.

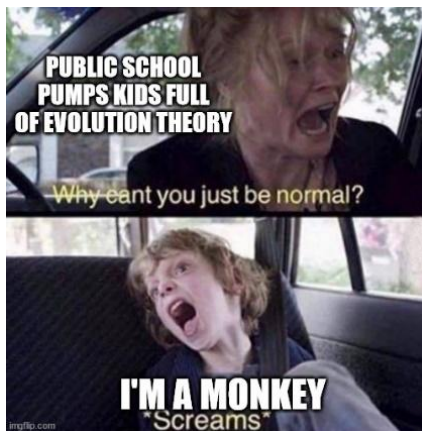
When Richard Dawkins (arch-evolutionist) tries to support the evolutionist view of the bombardier beetle evolving, he fails to explain how all those chambers, muscles, etc. would have evolved gradually. Many of the parts aren't necessary for the system and wouldn't have just shown up gradually. **Even if**

you come up with a story of what might be beneficial here and there and how it might evolve, it **still fails to explain the details of the extremely complex processes** that would need to take place for such a story to come about. **All they can say is that it might happen.** That's not very scientific.

Richard Dawkins describes the eye as a series of complex systems coming together. However, he never explains how those complex systems came to be. It's like saying a stereo is made from putting together an amplifier and a CD reader, etc., without explaining how those parts first came to be and how they were assembled. Evolutionists use **dramatic oversimplification** to make it seem more plausible that something happened by chance.

These explanations given by Dawkins are extremely simple and do not justly describe how these things came to be. They are illogical assumptions that everything would be just right by chance. *(Note: it's all conjecture and supposition. End note.)*

There are "**irreducibly complex**" systems that are useless until everything is in place. Natural selection can only choose systems that are already working.



You can make the case that **multiple complex systems evolved at the same time just in time** for a complex organism who needs all those multiple systems to live, but this is an empty argument; you **might as well argue that the Earth popped into existence yesterday by chance.**

Evolutionists submit that evolution isn't always gradual, but they say it has to be gradual when explaining complex, apparently designed objects like eyes because without gradualism, all you have is miracles. You can't have it both ways!



A mutation can change one step of instruction, such as 'place the legs on the head rather than on the abdomen,' but **it can't change the entire instruction**, such as 'instead of building a fax machine, build a radio.'

Tens of thousands of different molecules are involved with things like the eye and the bombardier beetle; **you can't say that you know those all just evolved** and came together. That is speculation; it is a belief. Debating whether such evolution could randomly occur is like 19th-century scientists debating whether butterflies could spontaneously generate out of meat. Again, we simplify too much. As we see the increasing complexity of these systems, the idea of random evolution to create them becomes less and less likely.

A mousetrap is an example of an irreducibly complex system; without all the parts present, it doesn't catch any mice. Not only do you need all the parts present at once, but all the parts need to be fine-tuned with just the right amount of spring, just the right positions, etc. An irreducibly complex system is assembled all at once.

Just because a bike is a precursor to a motorcycle doesn't mean the bike turned into the motorcycle. Biological evolution is limited to slight modifications, and there's nothing about a bike that you can slightly modify into an engine or fuel tank. Natural selection in a bicycle manufacturing plant cannot produce a motorcycle. There is no example in history of major biological changes.

Note: There is the supposed Cambrian explosion, but that is merely the fact that many fossils appeared seemingly out of nowhere; it's certainly not step-by-step proof of evolution. The reality of the Cambrian explosion (or other mass extinction claims) was the flood of Noah, which brought about special conditions to fossilize many animals that would have simply decayed in other conditions. End note.

In order to understand the barriers to evolution, you must understand the complexity of biological systems.

Behe Black Box Part 2 – Examining the Contents of the Box (Ch. 3-7)

(Note: This is where the complicated stuff is, and I won't attempt to give many notes here.)

Behe Black Box Ch. 3 Flagella

Cells are run by molecular machines.

We make machines that efficiently do tasks, but in biology, if there is a microscopic machine doing a simple task efficiently, if that had to evolve, it would have had to learn that task too.

What something is made of and how it works are two different things, which are both extremely complex.

Evolutionists have very creative minds. They can come up with stories to explain the evolution of anything, but they're just stories!

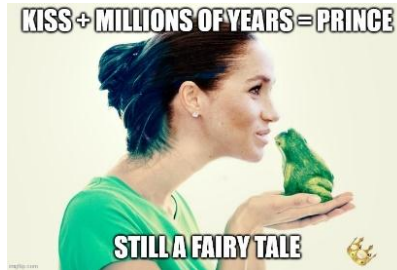
While modification goes on, systems are non-working.

The evolutionary literature explaining how these complex things would come to be is severely lacking. Further, the papers disagree with each other on the roads that would be taken, etc. They don't consider mechanical details; they just make big generalizations.

Nobody knows how the flagella evolved, and no research accounts for it. Some 40 different proteins are involved. The same is true for the cilia, wherein some 200 different proteins are involved.

Cartoons show extremely complex systems going through a series of events to set off a single trap. This is humorous because everything must work exactly

right to get the trap to go off—if one part of the whole sequence didn't work, the trap would fail. This is like evolution, and it's laughable. In biology, there really are very complex systems with a very specific end function, and evolution cannot account for it.



Note: it's like the old Paley's pocket watch in the desert analogy. If you find a pocket watch in the middle of the desert, do you conclude that it was put there by someone who owned, purchased, or created it, or do you conclude that it evolved randomly? End note.

Behe Black Box Ch. 4 Blood

Blood clotting is a very complex system of many interconnected parts. It must form only when and where it is required, or the whole system will clot and die. No one on earth has any idea how the coagulation current came to be.

Behe Black Box Ch. 5-7 From Here to There; A Dangerous World; Roadkill

Each tiny little step in evolution has such small odds that it's utterly ridiculous to consider it. It's not just a small chance that one thing would evolve into another thing, it's a small chance that a very small part of the evolution would happen. And when we talk small, we mean infinitely small odds, making this more of a fairy tale storybook than science.

Natural selection only works if there's something useful already there to select from. Necessary proteins wouldn't just appear with nothing to do until other stuff arrived.

If one thing goes wrong during a delivery, the package will not reach its destination and may as well never have been sent.

Extremely complex processes take place billions of times a day in the cells of our bodies. Science is stranger than fiction. It cannot be accounted for by random evolution, no matter how much time you give.

Note: Whenever science proves Darwin's macroevolution theory wrong, being statistically bizarre and so forth, they just expand the age of the Earth and the universe. However, they can only play this game for so long; Darwinism is truly on its way out. End note.

We see many irreducibly complex systems working together in even bigger irreducibly complex systems, and the mathematicians have said repeatedly that the current age allowed for the Earth and universe is not nearly enough for these things to happen randomly; they would need to be at least billions and billions and billions and billions and billions and billions times billions and billions and billions and billions of years older to give the remote chance. But as we can see, this is nonsense, you can't just sit around and take seriously a theory that requires such **small odds**. The smacking obvious answer is that the Earth and the universe were designed by a designer! You just can't get around that.

Irreducibly complex systems are all or nothing. You can't just add one part now and later add another part, or the system will not work.

You can't say that some parts of the cell were used for other functions before they were used in their current functions. This would leave a very lousy cell that would not sustain life. A single flaw in the cell's process pathway, and you die. If cells evolved as incomplete structures, our ancestors would have died, too.

There's no literature on the evolution of vesicles and many other topics in the evolution of microbiology.

Behe Black Box Afterward: Highlights

Over the past decade since this book was originally published, we have learned much more about microbiology, how things are even more complex, and this

strengthens the case of intelligent design.

Some say that these irreducibly complex systems could be used for other things as they break into simpler machines, but this is devolution, not evolution.

The author never said that parts of the irreducibly complex system couldn't be used for something else. He said that removing one part causes the whole system to stop functioning; it doesn't necessarily cause the individual parts to stop functioning.

Mouse traps weren't made by a handful of toothpicks getting together and deciding to be a mousetrap. You might as well assume that half of your car's transmission will jump out of your airbag. Essential components don't happily come out of accessories.

Richard Dawkins said biology is the study of living things that appear to have been designed. **Thus, even to the diehard Darwinists, design is evident. It's not merely a conclusion we draw when we can't think of anything else.** It's what we conclude when we get in touch with our inner ingenuity. Any engineer can pick out something that's been designed for a purpose, and he can usually pick out the purpose by looking at the structure of the object. The difficult thing would be to make the claim that random evolution is responsible for these things. **The burden of proof is on the one who denies what he can plainly see with his eyes.** In the absence of an explanation, we are rationally justified in assuming that complex things like Mount Rushmore were designed, not just evolved.



"All sciences begin with speculation, only Darwinism ends with it." Authors promoting evolution acknowledge this, that their work is speculation.

Assertions that microscopic machines evolved are based in speculation, not

Note: No legitimate cohesive reasonable sufficiently detailed explanation, at least. They are good storytellers, but their stories are all conjecture without direct evidence. End note.

There is no empirical evidence that transitional species link together at any distance to a single ancestor, and no evidence that this common ancestor existed.

If molecular change occurred, it must have been at clock-like intervals, not depending on environmental changes as evolution suggests.

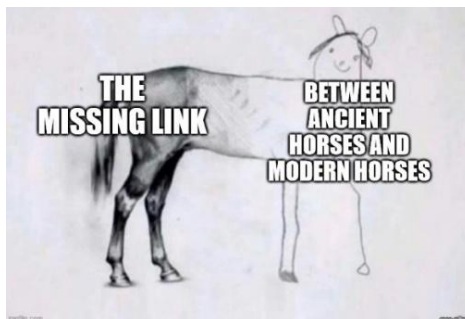
Just because two molecular forms are different does not imply natural selection.



There's no evidence that natural selection has creative power.

Note: Nature selects, it doesn't create new material to select from. It can show what has been described as survival of the fittest, but not arrival of the fittest. Further, beneficial mutations are extremely rare and short-lived. End note.

Many scientists advocate that the molecular clock says humans evolved from a common ancestor in Africa less than 200,000 years ago. Many evolutionists don't like this because it rules out a lot of the hominid transitional species from an older time and other location.



We can't just look at molecular evolution because the molecules had to be housed in organisms which would have had to evolve along with the molecules.

The real mystery is how a simple thing could have turned into a complex thing.

Molecular information adds to the complexity, showing that these are complex machines requiring the cooperation of multiple parts to carry out their function.

Note: Every field of science brings more complexity to the table and makes evolution much more ridiculous. End note.

The hemoglobin is so complex that it's called the molecular lung.

The more complex molecular biology, the less likely it is that mechanisms and time existed to transform one kind into another.

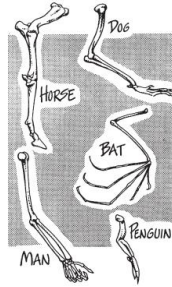
Note: This is why evolutionists are in the predictably humorous business of downplaying complexity and lengthening timeframes. End note.

Testing Darwinism with molecular evidence has never even been attempted.

PART 3: SIMILAR STRUCTURES



Similar (Homologous) Bone Structures?



On page 53, the LTSR authors claim that “the similarities in body structure of humans and animals hint at an evolutionary past.” (Image from LTSR included) They make the popular claim that bone structure similarities in different animals are somehow evidence they came from a common ancestor. I believe it means the same person created them all. The hands of humans and animals are clearly very different, notwithstanding the minor similarities. God made these designs very different, as the picture in the Let’s Talk book demonstrates. They look pretty different to me!

Identifying similarities only shows our ability to classify and overlook the vast differences between various animals and humans. These structures favor the direct divine creation model and go against natural selection from a common ancestor because not only are there similarities, but there are also major gaps and distinct differences between species.

Homologous structures were known to be signs of a common designer until evolutionary theorists foisted their dogmatic view on everyone, insisting that these rather mean a common ancestor. (See Stephen Meyer, “Darwin’s Doubt”)

In the evolution model, you would have many extremely similar species, and you wouldn't be able to tell where one started and the other ended. As Henry Morris pointed out, if cats and dogs came from a common ancestor, there would be 1000s of cat-dog species – you wouldn't be able to tell where the cat began and where the dog ended, there would be so many cat/dog variants walking around. Some comedians have pointed out the stupidity of evolution by saying, ‘If we came from monkeys, why are there still monkeys? Why didn't they evolve? Are they the retarded monkeys?’ Hilarious! While evolutionists will always have something else to say to uphold their theory, basic logic refreshingly points us toward the divine direct creation of the various species on Earth.

Elder Russel M. Nelson taught against homology and related evolutionary claims. He said, “Through the ages, **some persons without scriptural understanding** have tried to explain our existence by pretentious words such as ex nihilo (out of nothing). Others have deduced that, **because of certain similarities between different forms of life**, there has been a **natural selection** of the species, or **organic evolution** from one form to another. Still others have concluded that man came as a consequence of a “big bang,” which resulted in the creation of our planet and life upon it. To me, such theories are unbelievable!” (Elder Russel M. Nelson p. 9, *The Power Within Us* or *The Magnificence of Man*, March 29 1987, BYU Devotional.)

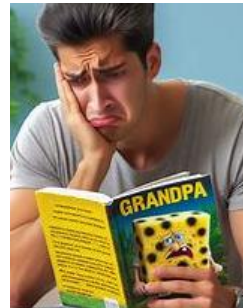
(Note: In the 2025 evolutionist book, this Magnificence of Man talk by Elder Nelson is footnoted in an appendix, but not quoted. It is cited in connection with their claim of people having “various views.” All they quote Nelson teaching is that he said there’s no conflict between true science and religion, and that he dedicated the Life Science building...)

Genetic Homology?

Genetics don’t match up with homologous structures. In research summarized by **Jonathan Wells and Paul Nelson**, it has now been discovered that at times “non-homologous structures [are] produced by organisms with supposedly homologous genes, but organisms with different genes can also produce similar structures.” (Homology: A Concept in Crisis
<http://www.arn.org/docs/odesign/od182/hobi182.htm>)

An article available in *Trends in Genetics* 2009 reported report that “10-20% of genes lack recognizable homologs in other species.” (*More than just orphans: are taxonomically-restricted genes important in evolution?*
<http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/19716618>) In

other words 10 – 20% of genes in species don't have evidence of ancestry. This is further discussed in an article available in *Nature Reviews, Genetics* 2011. It said, “[E]very evolutionary lineage harbors orphan genes that **lack homologues in other lineages and whose evolutionary origin is only poorly understood**. Orphan genes might arise from duplication and rearrangement processes followed by fast divergence; however, **de novo evolution** out of non-coding genomic regions is emerging as an important



additional mechanism.” (*The evolutionary origin of orphan genes*. <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/?term=The+evolutionary+origin+of+orphan+genes%2C+Nature+Reviews>) This sudden appearance of genetic material by “de novo”, or out of nothing, through material process, lacks credibility in the light of several other studies.

In the journal **Nature** in 2012, the ENCODE Project revealed that by their analysis, 80 percent of the human genome has a “biochemical function” (*An integrated encyclopedia of DNA elements in the human genome* <http://www.nature.com/nature/journal/v489/n7414/full/nature11247.html>)

Ewan Birney, ENCODE project’s Lead Analysis Coordinator, said, “It’s likely that 80 percent will go to 100 percent.” (ENCODE: the rough guide to the human genome, By Ed Yong | September 5, 2012 <http://blogs.discovermagazine.com/notrocketscience/2012/09/05/encode-the-rough-guide-to-the-human-genome/#.WlmL0nllCM8>) This level of functionality in a genome removes most all of the opportunity for non-coding regions of the cell to be the incubators for the “de novo” or out of nothing sudden emergence of proteins.

Evolutionists claim both differences and similarities between animal species as evidence for their theory. (Hint: this is circular reasoning.) Convergence is when very different animals happen to have a similarity, and they chalk it up to evolution. Divergence is when very similar animals happen to have some very different features, and again they chalk it up to a ‘different type’ of evolution. Convergence and divergence are but a few of the many invented words evolutionists use to explain away impossibilities.

Claiming that similarities are due to inheritance from a common ancestor when the common ancestor hasn’t been proven is another example of circular reasoning. The proof Darwinists need is species change, not similarities.

Does any similarity mean you descended from that? Did large spoons descend from small spoons?

The octopus and human eye are similar, so did we descend from an Octopus? If so, then why are we so different from an octopus in almost every other way?

Snakes and frogs are closer to humans than humans are to monkeys when it comes to the specific gravity of blood. This fact has some evolutionists saying our grandpa was more directly a snake than a monkey!

The rat disease of the Dark Ages only attacked people and Norway rats. So, did we descend from rats more directly than all other animals?

One scientist concluded that due to similarities in calcium phosphorous ratios in bone structures, we are directly related to turtles and elephants, and monkeys came from geese (or geese from monkeys), and that the dog was related to the horse, not the cat.

Based on amino acid cytochrome C similarities, one evolutionist researcher concluded that people are more closely related to turtles than turtles are to rattlesnakes and that people are more closely related to bread mold than sunflowers are related to bread mold.

Evolutionists didn't know how creatures with one kind of eye could possibly have descended from creatures with another kind of eye, so they chalked it up to "convergent evolution." There are also creatures like various types of insects which, though closely related, have dramatically different eye types.

People have bought into the money-into-human idea. Now we are being told we need to accept the mouse/elephant/octopus/turtle to human idea. When will it stop? You might as well claim that since land vertebrates all have two eyes, they must all have a common ancestor! The Devil is laughing, getting us duped into one stupidity after another.

Evolutionary Leftover (Vestigial) Structures?



On page 54, the LTSR authors discuss old structures as “evolutionary leftovers” that creatures and humans no longer need. They suggest these structures mean that whales had legs and humans had tails. Scientists are constantly finding that structures they thought were vestigial or useless have very important purposes.

At one time evolutionists listed 180 vestigial structures in the human body. **(Darrow, Clarence and William J. Bryan. (1997). The World's Most Famous Court Trial: The Tennessee Evolution Case Pub. The Lawbook Exchange, Ltd. p. 268)**

The human coccyx isn't useless like they thought; it supports weight, supports muscle, & helps balance.

The whale pelvis isn't useless like they thought; it is essential for reproduction.



In the past these structures were routinely surgically removed and discarded. Today it is recognized that every one of these structures in the human body serves a purpose.

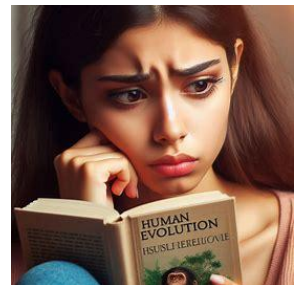
(Vestigial Organs Not So Useless After All, Studies Find, **National Geographic News**, <https://news.nationalgeographic.com/news/2009/07/090730-spleen-vestigial-organs.html>)

(See also Dr. Jerry Bergman, George Howe, *Vestigial Organs Are Fully Functional: A History and Evaluation of the Vestigial Organ Origins Concept Book*)

(See also the book Useless Organs: The Rise and Fall of a Central Claim of Evolution 2019 by Jerry Bergman)

Things once working in organisms can break down. Fish living in a cave may, after a period of time, lose their sight, etc. But considering human life, each of these structures once claimed to be vestigial has shown function or purpose. **(Dr. Jerry Bergman, George Howe, *Vestigial Organs Are Fully Functional: A History and Evaluation of the Vestigial Organ Origins Concept Book*)**

Some say that in the distant past, these structures had different or greater functionality, and evidence of past function is claimed by appealing to other living creatures that may have similar structures that do have different or greater functions. Such arguments are circular reasoning because they assume that evolutionary history is already demonstrated.

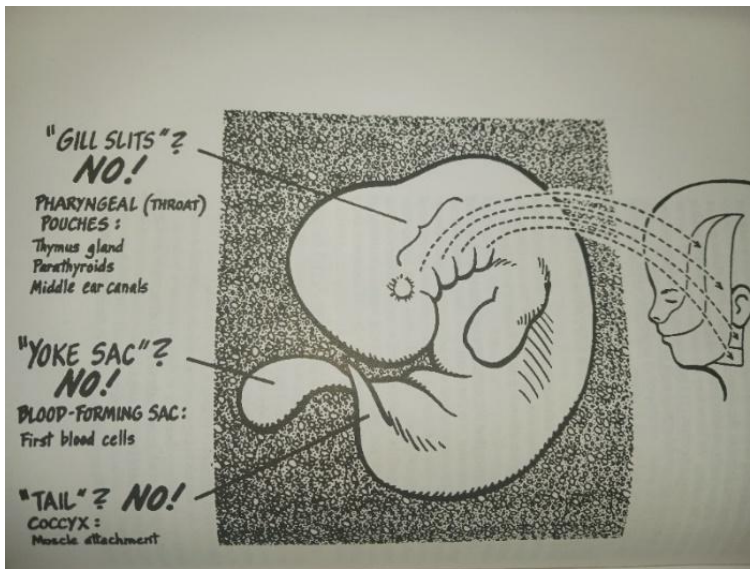


Similar Embryos?

On page 55 the LTSR authors bring up the outdated argument of similar appearances of human embryos and animals, claiming they all develop “gills and tails.”

The human embryo never at any time develops gills or gill slits, a tail, or fins and is never a fish. The recapitulation theory that humans are first fishes in embryo, then move along an evolutionary sequence as different embryonic animals and finally turn into human embryos used to be popular; evolutionists now must admit that it doesn't work.

The human embryo does develop pouches which become various glands and are guides for developing blood vessels and organs, so these features are not useless. It's elementary logic to claim that they are the same just because two things look alike.



(Image: Science vs Evolution p.698 by **Vance Ferrel**, EvolutionFacts.com)

Human embryos don't have gills; they have pharyngeal throat pouches, which develop into the thymus gland, parathyroids, and middle ear canals. **No oxygen is extracted from the fluid** as would happen with a gill. No gill slit opening of any kind exists in the embryo. These aren't gills!

Human embryos don't have a tail; they have a coccyx, which is essential for muscle attachment. They also don't have a yoke sac; they have a blood-forming sac that makes the first blood cells.

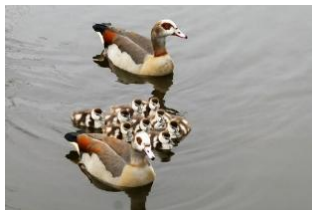
On a related note, though humans begin as something small and round, so do marbles, BBs, and ball bearings, yet you wouldn't say we share a common ancestor with those. Similarity doesn't prove ancestry. It's normal that features look similar in the beginning as life forms have similar features like heads and limbs, and they're in a similar environment. But then they specialize in their distinct species. The differences show up quite early, and these differences attest to creation, not evolution.

Darwin's friend Haeckel was repeatedly charged with fraud due to his embryo drawings, which had altered the sizes of heads, eyes, trunks, etc. His ape and man skeleton drawings also had modified heights and depicted apes as having upright postures. Haeckel was also an adulterer, and you won't get good fruit from a corrupt tree. Sadly, his drawings have appeared in many schoolbooks as evidence for evolution.

The human embryo gill theory was proven wrong in 1874, and it is dishonest to continue to advocate evolution based on this claim. Every stage of human embryo development is uniquely human and essential.

When we view human embryos as animals, is it any wonder that we have no shame in terminating them? As one evolutionist put it, “. . . some opponents of abortion respond that the fetus, unlike the dog or chimpanzee, is made in the image of God, or has an immortal soul. . . . But there is no evidence for these religious claims, and in a society in which we keep the state and religion separate, we should not use them as a basis for the criminal law . . .” (Neo-Darwinist **Peter Singer**, Dept. of Bioethics, Princeton University, “Abortion, the dividing lines,” Herald Sun, August 25, 2007)

Reproduction Only After Their Kind: Doctrine



In **1 Cor. 15:38-39** Paul taught that “**All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.**” (1 Cor. 15:38-39.)

Let us go to Genesis to demonstrate that animals can only produce after their own kind, which directly contradicts evolutionary theory’s claim of all animals (and plants) coming from a single common ancestor:

Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25: “And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit **after his kind**, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed **after his kind**, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, **after his kind**: and God saw that it was good. . . . And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, **after their kind**, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. . . . And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature **after his kind**, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth **after his kind**: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth **after his kind**, and cattle **after their kind**, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good.” (Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25)

Ask yourself why God would repeat the instruction “after their kind” so often if it wasn’t of vital importance? Let us go on, still in Genesis:

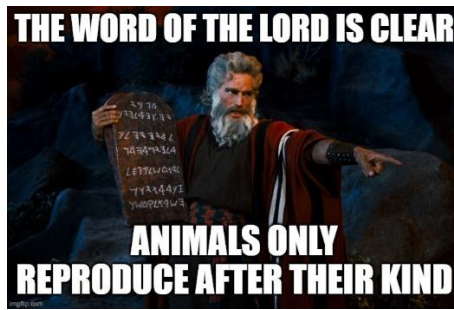
Genesis 6:19-20: “And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls **after their kind**, and of cattle **after their kind**, of every creeping thing of the earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. And take thou unto thee of all food that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and for them.” (Genesis 6:19-20)

Genesis 7:14: “They, and every beast **after his kind**, and all the cattle **after their kind**, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth **after his kind**, and

every fowl **after his kind**, every bird of every sort.” (Genesis 7:14)

Now on to the book of Moses: **Moses 2:11-12, 21, 24-25**: “And I, God, said: Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, the fruit tree yielding fruit, **after his kind**, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed should be in itself upon the earth, and it was so even as I spake. And the earth brought forth grass, every herb yielding seed **after his kind**, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed should be in itself, **after his kind**; and I, God, saw that all things which I had made were good; . . . And I, God, created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, **after their kind**, and every winged fowl **after his kind**; and I, God, saw that all things which I had created were good. . . . And I, God, said: Let the earth bring forth the living creature **after his kind**, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth **after their kind**, and it was so; And I, God, made the beasts of the earth **after their kind**, and cattle **after their kind**, and everything which creepeth upon the earth **after his kind**; and I, God, saw that all these things were good.” (Moses 2:11-12, 21, 24-25)

Abraham won’t want to be left out of this party. **Abraham 4:11-12, 21, 24-25** says, “And the Gods said: Let us prepare the earth to bring forth grass; the herb yielding seed; the fruit tree yielding fruit, **after his kind**, whose seed in itself yieldeth its own likeness upon the earth; and it was so, even as they ordered. And the Gods organized the earth to bring forth grass >from its own seed, and the herb to bring forth herb from its own seed, yielding seed **after his kind**; and the earth to bring forth the tree from its own seed, yielding fruit, whose seed could only bring forth the same in itself, **after his kind**; and the Gods saw that they were obeyed. . . . And the Gods prepared the waters that they might bring forth great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters were to bring forth abundantly **after their kind**; and every winged fowl **after their kind**. And the Gods saw that they would be obeyed, and that their plan was good. . . . And the Gods prepared the earth to bring forth the living creature **after his kind**, cattle and creeping things, and beasts of the earth **after their kind**; and it was so, as they had said. And the Gods organized the earth to bring forth the beasts **after their kind**, and cattle **after their kind**, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth **after its kind**; and the Gods saw they would obey.” (Abraham 4:11-12, 21, 24-25)



The teachings of latter-day prophets on this subject, applying it specifically to refute evolution, are abundant. We will now review a small sample of their teachings.



Image: Likely William Warner Major see

https://web.archive.org/web/20230122022915/http://silverepicent.com/photofound/photofound/Photograph_Found/Appendix_C.html, Public domain, via Wikimedia Commons

Joseph Smith taught, “God has made certain decrees which are fixed and immovable; for instance—God set the sun, the moon and the stars in the heavens, and gave them their laws conditions and bounds, which they cannot pass, except by his commandments; they all move in perfect harmony in their sphere and order, and are as lights, wonders, and signs unto us. The sea also has its bounds which it cannot pass. God has set many signs on the earth, as well as in the heavens; for instance, the oak of the forest, the fruit of the tree, the herb of the field—**all bear a sign** that seed hath been planted there; for **it is a decree of the Lord that every tree, plant, and herb bearing seed should bring forth of its kind, and cannot come forth after any other law or principle.**” (Joseph Smith,



Joseph Smith also threw down some serious doctrine that flies in the face of evolution when he taught, “If Jesus Christ was the Son of God, and John discovered that God the Father of Jesus Christ had a Father, you may suppose that He had a Father also. Where was there ever a son without a father? And where was there ever a father without first being a son? Whenever did a tree or anything spring into existence without a progenitor? And everything comes in this way. Paul says that which is earthly is in the likeness of that which is heavenly.” (Joseph Smith, Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, p. 373)

Brigham Young also related the reproduction of species to indicate our literal parent-child relationship to God. He taught, “Man is the offspring of God.... We are as much the children of this great Being as we are the children of our mortal progenitors. We are flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone, and the same fluid that circulates in our bodies, called blood, once circulated in His veins as it does in ours. As the seeds of grains, vegetables and fruits produce their kind, so man is in the image of God.” (Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses, 9:283)



John Taylor was straightforward in his renunciation of evolution when he taught the common parentage doctrine. He said, “All the works of God connected with the world which we inhabit, and with all other worlds, are strictly governed by law...**the animal and vegetable creations are governed by certain laws**, and are composed of certain elements peculiar to themselves. This applies to man, to the beasts, fowls, fish and creeping things, to the insects and to all animated nature; each one possessing its own distinctive features, each requiring a specific sustenance, each having an **organism and faculties governed by prescribed laws to perpetuate its own kind**. So accurate is the formation of the various living creatures that an intelligent student of nature can tell by any particular bone of the skeleton of an animal to what class or order it belongs. These principles **do not change, as represented by evolutionists of the Darwinian school, but the primitive organisms of all living beings exist in the same form as when they first received their impress from their Maker**. There are, indeed, some very slight exceptions, as for instance, the ass may mix with the mare and produce the mule; but there it ends, the violation of the laws of procreation receives a check, and its operations can go no further. Similar compounds may possibly be made by experimentalists in the vegetable and mineral kingdoms, but the original elements remain the same. Yet this is not the normal, but an abnormal condition with them, as with animals, birds, etc.; and if we take man, he is said to have been made in the image of God, for the simple reason that he is a son of God; and being His son, he is, of course, His offspring, an emanation from God, in whose likeness, we are told, he is made. He did **not originate from a chaotic mass of matter, moving or inert, but came forth possessing, in an embryotic state, all the faculties and powers of a God**. And when he shall be perfected, and have progressed to maturity, **he will be like his Father—a God**; being indeed His offspring. As the horse, the ox, the sheep, and **every living creature, including man, propagates its own species and perpetuates its own kind, so does God perpetuate His**.” (John Taylor, *Mediation and Atonement*, pp. 163-165)

Joseph Fielding Smith said, “there is an eternal decree that animals of different families, or species, shall remain separate from other species, and there are bounds they cannot pass.” (Joseph Fielding Smith, *Man, His Origin and Destiny* [Salt Lake City: Deseret Book Co., 1954], p. 167)

Now look at what Elder **Boyd K. Packer** recently had to say in General Conference: “No lesson is more manifest in nature than that all living things do as the Lord commanded in the Creation. They reproduce “after their own kind.” (See Moses 2:12,24.) They follow the pattern of their parentage. Everyone knows that; every four-year-old knows that! A bird will not become an animal nor a fish. A mammal will not beget reptiles, nor “do men gather...figs of thistles.” (Matt. 7:16.) In the countless **billions of opportunities in the reproduction of living things, one kind does not beget another**. If a species

ever does cross, the offspring generally cannot reproduce. The pattern for all life is the pattern of the parentage. This is demonstrated in so many obvious ways, even an ordinary mind should understand it. **Surely no one with reverence for God could believe that His children evolved from slime** or from reptiles. (Although one can easily imagine that those who accept the theory of evolution don't show much enthusiasm for genealogical research!) **The theory of evolution, and it's a theory, will have an entirely different dimension when the workings of God in creation are fully revealed.** Since every living thing follows the pattern of its parentage, are we to suppose that God had some other strange pattern in mind for His offspring? Surely we, His children, are not, in the language of science, a different species than He is?" (Boyd K. Packer, General Conference, Oct 1984)

Other church leaders including George Albert Smith, David O. McKay, Joseph Fielding Smith, Mark E. Peterson, etc. have preached the same message of species only producing after their own kind, and how this doctrine clearly refutes evolution.

PART 4: NO SUCH COMMON ANCESTOR: **THE FAKE BIOLOGICAL TREE, LACK OF** **TRANSITIONAL FOSSILS, & LIMITS OF** **SPECIES CHANGE**

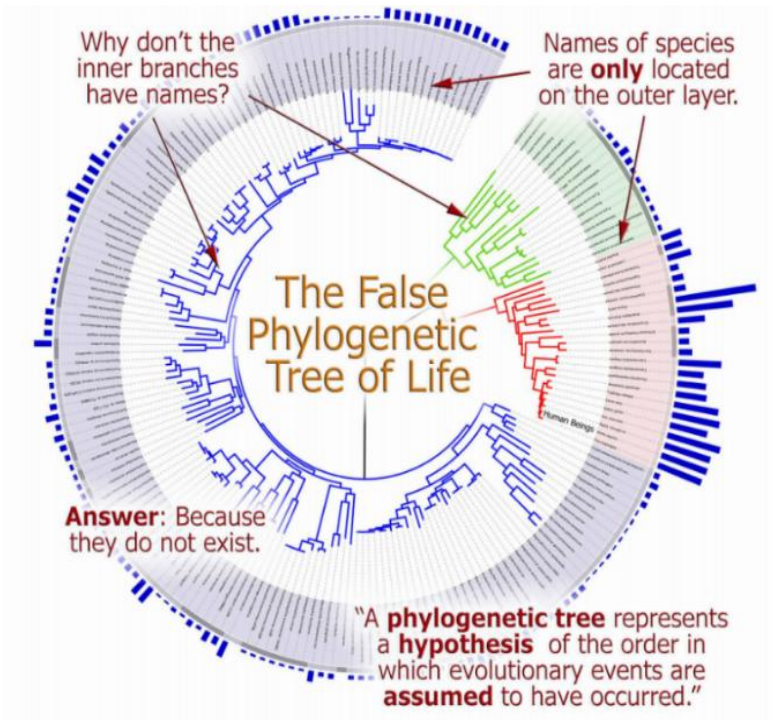
Insisting on a Common Ancestor: Biology's Tree



On page 48 the LTSR authors point out that evolution isn't a monkey poofing into a human, or a blob poofing out limbs. But evolutionists must admit that the overall consequence of evolution is a monkey turning into a human. After all, you insist on all living things coming from one common ancestor. Throw in time as the magic ingredient. Kissing a frog to turn it into a human, that's a fairy tale. Kissing a frog then waiting millions of years at which point it completes its transition into a human - that's still a fairy tale! Who has been around to scientifically witness and measure this occurrence? Nobody.

On page 48 the LTSR authors state their evolutionary view that "all living things on earth (both plants and animals) share a common ancestor." They fail to mention humans here, perhaps due to a popular trend in putting humans and animals in the same category. Evolution teaches that animals and humans originated in a single common ancestor. **On page 48**, the LTSR authors start their evolution chapter by claiming that evolution can tell us the "truth" about "when" and "how" life came to be on Earth. No, it can't! Throughout their book, the LTSR authors assume evolution as a proven fact and sweep the controversy under the rug. Science isn't settled, and they should be more upfront about that.

Consider how the phylogenic tree of life lacks connecting ancestors between species, and how inner species aren't labeled because they have never been discovered. Nature gives us a series of diverse creations, and it is the speculative theories of men that seek to connect all these species into a single common ancestor.

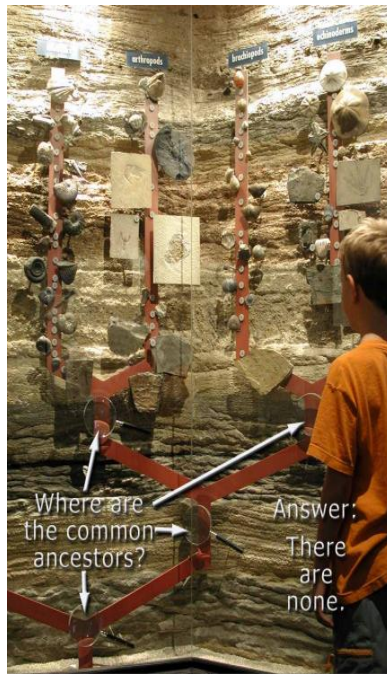


(Image: Universal Model 2)

Sometimes, they do throw in a name at intermediate locations on their phylogenetic tree when no discoveries of those animals have been made; they just insert a name as a placeholder! (See **Stephen Meyer**, "Darwin's Doubt")

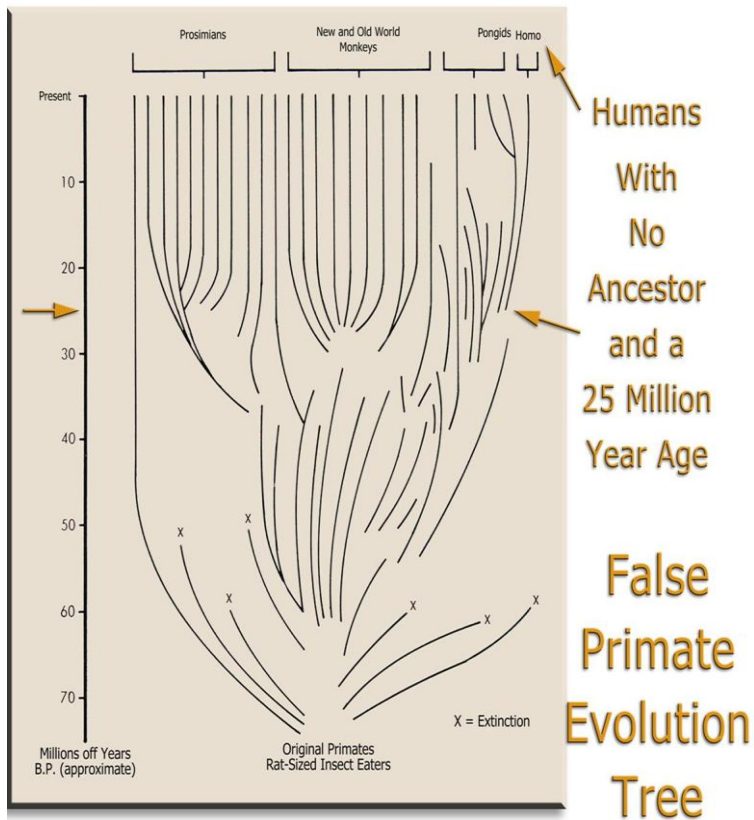
Biochemist Michael Behe put it well when he said, "All sciences begin with speculation, only Darwinism ends with it." ("Darwin's Black Box," Afterward.)

Notice how ancestral trees at museum displays don't have names of species where branches occur. This is because there are no 'missing link' ancestors between animals and men. In charts of human-monkey hominid ancestry, the branches are not connected. They cannot connect these branches because there is no proof that any of these species are related.



(Image: Universal Model 2)

The lack of common ancestors led evolutionist W. Ford Doolittle, evolutionary and molecular biologist professor at Dalhousie University, to say, “The rooting of the universal tree is hopelessly compromised.”



(Image: Universal Model 2)

Near the time of Darwin's death, **Elder Orson F. Whitney** talked about never finding the missing link between animal and man. He said, "There is no instance on record where a baboon ever evolved into a human being, and science in attempting to unearth a "missing link" which it is claimed will connect mankind with monkeykind, is like a blind man hunting through a haystack to find a needle which isn't there. **For man is the child of God, fashioned in His image and endowed with His attributes.**" (*Man's Origin and Destiny Contributor*, Vol 3:9 (June 1882), 268-70.)

Later in 1905 **Elder George Albert Smith** taught, "No matter if scientists and great men of the world shall proclaim that we have evolved from the lower order of animals, **the witness of the Spirit to you, my brethren and sisters, is that you are the offspring of the Lord...**" (*Elder George Albert Smith Conference Report*, Apr. 1905)

Joseph Fielding Smith specifically taught against evolutionary biology's tree of

common ancestors. He said, "the altogether useless concept of the animal genealogical tree...affords no satisfactory picture of the relationships between the million living species of animals and the 120,000 known extinct species. For the last 70 years evolutionists have discussed hundreds of supposed ancestral derivations, without having agreed about a single one. Attempts to blend together the characters of the fourteen different phyla into one **hypothetical** common stock only result in producing an opalescent pattern of body structures, which **proves nothing for the common origin** of those phyla. The so-called pedigree of the animal kingdom is utterly unlike the genealogical trees of human families, because the latter deal only with members of one species, whereas the former include multitudes of different species and postulate countless purely hypothetical links between them. Even the shortened genealogical trees found in popular writings are apt to dogmatize about the derivations of whole phyla—that is, of anything from 2,000 to 100,000 species at a time. The family genealogical tree shows a limited number of names, arranged in the semblance of a tree, of people actually known to have been related by descent. It is a compilation of facts, like a dictionary. Nothing resembling it is known regarding species connections. When we come to discuss the latter, we are **no longer dealing with first-hand evidence** (i.e. with verbal or written traditions) as to the connections concerned. **All is hypothesis. We postulate long ancestries simply because we do not know the real ones, and because creatures have to be accounted for somehow.** We note the incontrovertible fact that new creatures, born every year, experience the same time—and form—regulated fate as their parents; hence the sequences we see are obviously links in chains or organisms of which neither the beginnings nor the ends are visible to us. But that does not justify us in supposing that, just because each individual changes in form while developing from childhood to adolescence, therefore its remote ancestors must have changed from one species into another. Again, even when we deal with the members of a single existing species, **we find it impossible, on purely anatomical grounds apart from historic testimony, to demonstrate the connection between individual parents and their offspring.** Among animals, the father is apt to disappear nameless among the multitude of his species, after taking his brief part in procreation, and science is powerless to re-identify him. Despite these facts, evolutionists search for "ancestors" in the graveyards of the past, and arrange fossil fragments (e.g. leg bones, teeth, or skulls) of various extinct species of horse into hypothetical series, and—in complete disregard of the rules of group-position and form-believe that these represent real ancestries." (Joseph Fielding



Joseph Fielding Smith commented on the absurd logic involved in common

origin claims. He said, "Let us suppose for the sake of argument, that the first speck of life was an amoeba. We can suppose for that is in keeping with the entire doctrine of organic evolution, for its **entire structure is based on supposition**, and cannot be based on anything else—so, we will suppose, that back several millions or billions of years—no one was there to watch the process by which this speck of life came spontaneously into existence—



the amoeba suddenly appeared and multiplied, as the amoeba will do, and after millions of years, it, or one of its descendants began to develop fins, then a head and then a tail and after several more millions of years it became a fish, or a tadpole, or a brachiopod, or a trilobite, or a snail, even a worm—it **makes no difference** which, **one guess is as good as another**—and becoming tired of the water it came out upon the land, leaving its companions to develop into aquatic [sic] animals, while it dug itself in the soil and became a plant, a fern, a rose bush or a tree. Then another, discovering that the land was pleasant, also came forth from the water and became a frog, a toad, a lizard or a snake and in course of time its



descendant became a tiger, a lion, a bear, an elephant, dinosaur or a little timid lamb; perhaps it took to the air as a dove, a robin, a hawk or an eagle. Why go any farther? **Does it not all sound extremely ridiculous?** Well, so it is! Yet it is **this kind of rubbish that is put forth apparently in all seriousness**. Books are written about it; lectures are given in class rooms, from pulpits and platforms, and thousands of well meaning people say they believe it! Then again the question arises: Each of these animals had to have a companion, and we find ourselves in a quandary to discover just why and how both males and females came into existence, both in the animal world and among trees and other vegetation. So we find ourselves floundering in the depths of an unfathomable hypothesis about which no one has ever been able to do more than to make an uncertain guess. Others of this amoeba's descendants became a bee, a wasp or a grasshopper, a

gnat or a fly. Among these **wonderful mutations** there also came forth a monkey, then a baboon, a gorilla and then man! My dear friends, cannot you see how utterly foolish it all is? Why is it that thousands of intelligent looking human beings are willing to accept these stupid teachings? Frankly it is because Satan has deceived them and they love darkness rather than the light. **Surely the day has come** prophesied by Paul and written in his second Epistle to the Thessalonians: “**And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they receive not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.**” (2 Thes. 2:8-12)" (Joseph Fielding Smith, Man: His Origin & Destiny, Ch. 7 The Hypothesis of Organic Evolution)

Smith’s connection with evolutionary science claims and the great deception of the last days should give us pause.

A more inspired approach to a tree of life is a vineyard of life. In the famous Ken Ham vs Bill Nye debate, Ham displayed this image, which aligns with multiple created kinds, and a reset at the global flood:



(<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=z6kgvhG3AkI&t=1560s>, min. 26 :29, Bill Nye Debates Ken Ham - HD (Official) by Answers in Genesis)

The orchard is demonstratable, the single tree is not!

Species Change

On page 25 the LTSR authors promote the idea that there are “transitional fossils.”

The fact remains that we have not found the transitional fossils which Darwin’s theory called for. The record is full of gaps from one species to the next. This is why evolutionists have invented theories like “punctuated equilibrium” claiming these changes happened ‘quickly’ over a few hundred thousand years, but with lots of stasis (uneventful time) between the changes.

Whenever evolution theory statistically fails to demonstrate reasonable amounts of change within the allotted time frame, it is changed, lengthening the time. No amount of revision will save this theory; let it go!

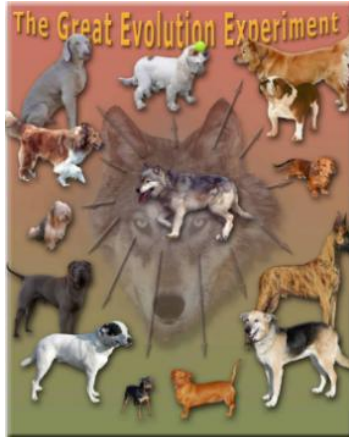
On page 25-26 the LTSR authors claim to ‘close the gap’ between a walking land mammal evolving into a whale. To do so, they make a series of speculative claims about transitional animal fossils. Sequences about which animal came first are highly speculative, and the detailed mechanism of one fossil turning into another remains unexplained in all the scientific literature. (See the writings of Stephen Meyer for more on this.)



On pages 24-26 of LTSR, in their “God of the Gaps” section, the authors claim that there are transitional fossils and that God didn’t just fill in the gaps of one form going into the other. Nature shows us very different kinds of animals, and evolutionists are on a mission to show that animals all came from a common ancestor, so they claim there is evidence of ancient animals existing in the ‘gaps’ between the diverse animals we see today.

This is all based on a flawed premise. The fossils aren’t transitional, and there’s no gap to fill, which implies that there is no sequence of change. The differences between the species have always and will always be there. The fact of large gaps between species is a major problem for evolution and major evidence for creation. Remember: species are very different from each other. This attests to

specific creation and negates evolution theory's premise that everything evolved from a common ancestor.



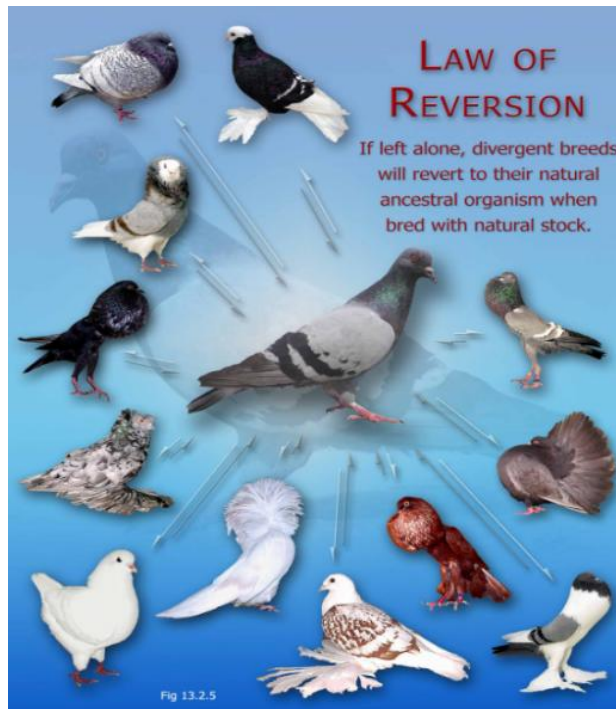
What about species change? Despite all our breeding and extensive observation, no one has seen a new species emerge. As the famous **Science journal** reported, “No one has actually witnessed the birth of a species in the wild...” (Science, 25 June 1999, p2106)



(Images: Universal Model 2)

After all our dog breeding, we still can't get anything but a dog. It's the same for pigeons: many varieties, but never a new species.

As one scientist put it, “**At no point does the breeder produce a breed of pigeon that is so extreme that one can no longer consider it a pigeon...endless varieties can be produced but in no case are new species formed.**” (In Search of Deep Time: **Henry Gee**, The Free Press, 1999, p33)



(Image: Two separate species are unable to breed, and specially bred animals revert back to their natural stock when left alone. From Universal Model.)

One asks, ‘What if you wait millions of years? Perhaps then you’d see a species change.’ Waiting millions of years isn’t something we can do and measure, and adding time isn’t going to override known laws of genetics magically.



Overview of Scientific Reasons Why Evolution Doesn't Work by Rebekah Davis of Examining Origins: On Mutation, Selection, The Tree, Fossil Record, Etc.

https://www.youtube.com/live/bR3DTKvqWIY?is=A9_n-k3YF-S8DJ-q

Be sure to see the expansive incredible work Rebecca is doing at her Examining Origins YouTube channel. Here is a taste of it. These are my notes highlighting this video, with added commentary.

There are no supposed mountains of evidence for evolution!

MUTATION & SELECTION:

Mutations are not positive even if you want to stay there's a tiny few of them that are there's not nearly enough.

Mutations are the only way Evolution could create anything and they're detrimental and insufficient.

Selection doesn't come up with new things it chooses from what's already there.

Selection doesn't have foresight to build integrated systems, and we see integrated systems even on the smallest levels of life like the cell.

It's laughable how evolutionists try and come up with ways to explain how one life form changed into others. They just look at two different things and come up with random ideas about how one could have changed into the other.

REPRODUCTION AND WHAT CAME FIRST:

The question of what came first the chicken or the egg, the evolutionists say the egg, they say it came from the proto chicken and that came from the proto-proto chicken and they keep going back and they won't answer how the first complex egg came.

The chicken egg problem is only a problem for evolution. A better theory is that life was designed. (More on this at the end.)

Note a recent evolution movie talked about a new species emerging. It showed a picture of an egg. They were trying to push the dogma of dinosaurs becoming birds, which is complete bogus. But they don't answer is where those eggs come from. End note.

Note: I also like the theory that the design of life simply entailed bringing life from previous worlds onto this one. God Himself, being our father, made the first humans here. And He brought various animals and plants. Brigham Young famously gives the analogy of starting a new farm. You don't reinvent the wheel, you bring the materials from the previous farm. And fathers help sons get new operations going. Indeed, creation is the family business! Brigham was also remarkably plain when he taught that the Biblical truth that things are made from their parents kinds, and in no other way. Joseph Smith taught this too. How any Latter-day Saint could believe in evolution is beyond me. End note.

Evolution would have to produce a male and a female in one generation to reproduce. Though evolutionists will make up stories about this and everything else those stories are not satisfying. There are many very different types of reproductive organs, highly specific. And why would these develop at all if before they developed, somehow the creatures were able to reproduce, as evolution suggests.

FOSSIL RECORD SUDDEN APPEARANCES:

At some of the lowest places of the fossil record we have the sudden appearance of complex eyes like the trilobite etc. Evolutionists say that

early on life was simple and it got more complex over time yet we have these sudden early complex appearances in the fossil record.

Note Dr Carl Werner does an excellent job of pointing out how many ancient fossil forms are just modern Life forms given a new name to make them appear of a different age because they're found at different places. End note.

Darwin called it an "abominable mystery" that we see the sudden appearance of flowering plants in the fossil record. There's all kinds of "explosions" in the fossil record.

Note: another hobby theory of evolutionists is punctuated equilibrium. They claim Evolution went on pause for a long time and then it suddenly did a bunch of stuff and then it went on pause for a long time and did a bunch more stuff. This is a fancy way of getting around the fact that things appear suddenly in the fossil record like the Cambrian explosion and many other instances. A much more simple explanation is that various things were created. End note.

Note: Stephen Meyer gives the analogy of jumping across the Grand canyon. Clearly unbelievable. But someone says 'oh lots of little buttes appeared and I jumped across one, and then it fell behind me so you don't see it anymore.' So they're claiming all these intermediate steps existed, you just can't see them. So it is with evolution, we don't see the intermediate steps, it's highly theoretical, and frankly ridiculous. End note.

THE TREE:

The tree of life is a complete mess, there's no tree linking modern Life forms to a supposed single common animal ancestor. When evolutionists run into a problem with their tree they just make up a new word. Parallel evolution, complete lineage sorting, ghost lineage, deep homology, convergent evolution, etc.

One example is flying squirrels and sugar gliders, one marsupial the other with a placenta, yet they go on different branches of the tree even though they look very much alike. They use the word convergent evolution to try and explain this.

They claim different crab forms developed five or six times, They put them in different families, claiming that this shape developed independently over and over. They call it convergent evolution.

The same with eyes. They say that eyes have separately evolved on different branches 45 to 60 separate times. The human eye and the octopus eye are similar yet these are supposed to be totally different lines on the tree.

The same with photosynthesis. 62 types of it and they claim it's all developed each time independently on different branches. Photosynthesis has been called the most convergent evolution. But no it's not simple to make and it's far more complex than our solar panels. This complex evolution shouldn't be happening all over the place.

"Your whole evolutionary tree is on fire"

"Convergent evolution is everywhere which means there is no tree of life"

Note evolutions tree of Life is the apostate replacement for the true Christian tree of life in Christ. End note.

So the idea of the evolution tree is that you start simple and you get more complex and everything builds off each other but they recognize this isn't what nature shows so they claim these things independently evolved over and over and over on different branches.

"If you are believing in evolution you are believing in something in spite of scientific observation."

Most people don't pay attention to the issue of evolution and just believe in it because they're told that smart people believe in it. They are not critically thinking.

Evolution corrupts people's minds. It makes it incredibly hard to find God if you believe in evolution.

Evolutionists keep claiming we don't know what evolution is. Everyone knows what evolution is. It's been rammed down our throats since elementary school.

She is willing to debate anyone, so let me know if you find a challenger!

"Evolution is not the best current explanation for the biodiversity of life. It's a terrible explanation. It is proven wrong many times over by scientific observations. Why is it still hanging on? It's hanging on for different reasons, mostly religious reasons."

Note: what a strange phenomenon that evolution, the philosophy of atheism, is now hanging on for religious reasons. Indeed, the religion of the devil is what keeps evolution around. It certainly isn't the religion of the Bible. To say that God used evolution is apathetic and entirely unnecessary and redundant compromise. End note.

"Evolution is on the level of absurdity with flat earth. Maybe more so. That's how strong our evidence is against evolution."

Life only comes from life. But evolutionists want to break that law.

When evolutionists can't respond to the scientific problems with evolution, they change the conversation to attack religious beliefs. It doesn't help their case.

She suggests that one possibility for diversity of animals after the flood is God could simply create more animals.

Note another big possibility is that the ark was so big that a lot more types of animals could have fit on it than simple thinking has previously allowed for. I think it was Jeanson the geneticist who pointed that out. End note.

Even if you don't have a better explanation for the origin of life than evolution, evolution can be false all on its own. If someone doesn't have a better explanation it doesn't mean evolution is true. But the better explanation is that life was designed! This resolves chicken and egg problems evolutionists have, it resolves fossil record problems evolutionists have, it resolves tree of life problems evolutionists have, etc.

To say in the beginning God created makes sense scientifically. On the other hand evolution doesn't make sense scientifically. Evolution is just another religion, just another origins story.

Note: As Dr. Kent Hovind, the famous creation teacher, says, "Evolution is a carefully protected state religion."

Is Genesis History? Documentary Highlights & Commentary: Biology (on Transitional Species)

Devin Anderson, PhD, microbiologist, speaks of what's inside dinosaur bones. **Tissue with cells** has been found in dinosaur fossils that are supposedly 80 million years old, but those should have broken down faster. Such tissue has been found in triceratops, etc.

Note: Learn more about Mary Schweitzer's findings on dinosaur tissue at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0-K7_H27Wq4 End note.

See the Creation Research Society.



Soak a fossil in EDTA; the tissue remains stretchable and pliable. An even closer electron scanner shows extreme details of the cells. You would not expect such **elaborate detail still intact** if the sample were as old as many claim. The scientific community responded to this, saying it was just bacteria or other things it could be, so those who originally published this tissue finding did more research and even found proteins. The controversy has been how to explain such. Some claim it means nothing because our other methods of dating say it's older. But this tissue is a method of dating. This challenges the **entire dating process**.



Time is the critical component for evolution; they claim to account for the massive changes of organisms over time. Darwin first read about a million-year-old earth and made his theory fit that paradigm; he didn't come up with the million-year idea.

Note: Similarly, people first hear about the theory of evolution and then go around looking for the missing links. They didn't find evidence before making the theory; it was backward.

Evolution is a belief that enough change over time and enough time can account for every species coming from one thing, but there are major **missing links in every species**. A shark is a shark, and there are variations of a shark, but even back in the fossil record, you have sharks.

No one would agree that random mutations would result in a higher lifeform. The number of changes required to move from one species to another requires **many changes at once**.

Things do change over time, but **they don't jump** to different species. Several animals can be very similar within their group. Animals can have similar sets of genes, but the genes controlling the development of the embryo are very different in different species.

Look at computer programs; everything doesn't just come from a single symbol.

The 4th dimension is time; the genome changes shape over time; all 3 dimensions change in the 4th dimension. You **can't build something like that one step at a time**; there must be foresight, it can't be one letter at a time with natural selection. Animals were **created with the ability to change** and adapt to their environments, and we have mistaken that for evolution.



An ecosystem collapses without all factors present; remove just a few factors, and it collapses. If you have 'missing links,' you can't have a complete genome.

Each kind of animal descended from a **master form on the ark** of Noah. God didn't just build a cat, he built an animal from which a variety of cats could come. Today's diversity is built into the kind. (But not every kind came from a single common ancestor.)

Natural selection can't generate all the diversity we see; it does fine-tune, but it **doesn't account for all the variety**. Selection takes a variation and turns it into a local adaptation. In the beginning, an exquisite design is built into an animal's system, including the ability to adapt to different climates to some extent. Each kind has its own tree of variation. Therefore, the Genesis paradigm embraces both similarity and difference.

Note: Evolution's engine of natural selection is inherently atheistic. It is creation by natural, not supernatural, means. The whole point of evolution is to do away with God and purpose. What we are learning in cutting-edge science is that it simply can't be done without supernatural means. Design is inherent and plainly evident. End note.

Neanderthals are a variety of humans, just as there are a **large variety** of dogs. But there are **discontinuities between humans and non-humans**. Apes, for example, are very different from humans.

Dr. Carl Werner Creationism Intro & Highlights on Lack of Transitional Fossils

See TheGrandexperiment.vhx.tv and <https://www.thegrandexperiment.com>

There are hundreds of types of **modern animals found in the same areas of dinosaur fossils**.

In the evolutionary lineups whether it's humans or whales etc. most of the **specimens in that lineup are made up**, they are not found, they are fake. They put stuff in the lineup that they know shouldn't be there. They also put multiple humans in a monkey to man line and there should only be one human because that's where the line is going.

When it comes to transitional fossils we have lots of fossils we have over a billion fossils, but we **never find the transitional** fossils. You find hundreds of bats but never something that was becoming a bat. You don't find the ancestors to these different species.

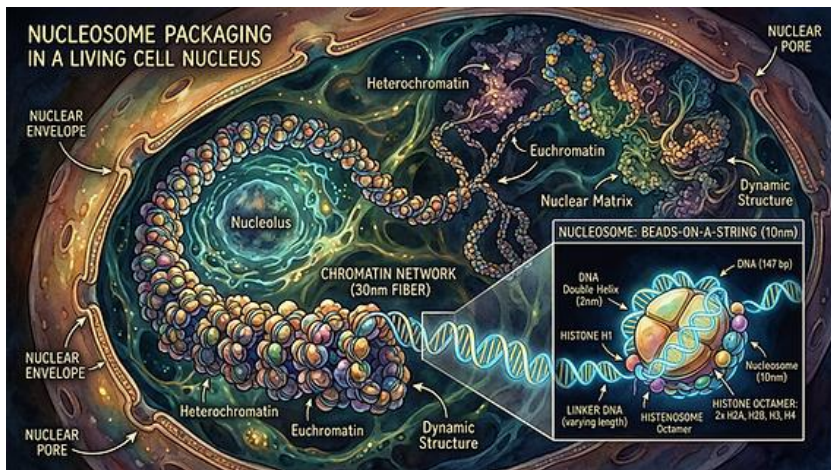
Many of the **hominid frauds** were perpetuated by museum scientists. They **intentionally** mislabeled things, planted bones in areas for diggers to find, etc.

The most recent fraud claim, the guy moved the skull opening to look not like an ape but like a man. He also found an ape femur near the skull but didn't talk about it. It also wasn't buried it was just in the sand. (From a 'Human fossil frauds' video)

God's Incredible Adaptation Machine: Part 1 (Epigenetics, DNA Switches, Loosening & Tightening) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/god-s-incredible-adaptation-machine>

Updated: Apr 20

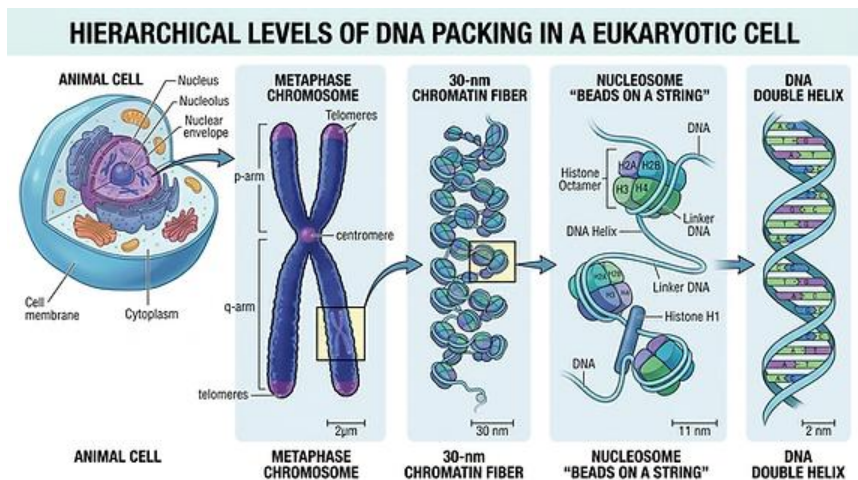


How DNA Wrapping Unlocks Adaptation Through Epigenetics

Imagine peering into the nucleus of a single cell and witnessing a masterpiece of divine engineering. Two meters of delicate DNA coil, fold, and precisely wrap around tiny protein spools called nucleosomes. This is not random packing. It is God's Incredible Adaptation Machine at work, dynamically controlling which

genes get expressed and which stay silent. Far from a static blueprint, this wrapping system allows living things to adapt to their environment in real time. Changes can even echo across generations when the pressures become permanent. True science does not just describe this. It reveals the breathtaking foresight of the Creator who designed life to thrive amid change.

Let's break it down with the precision it deserves while marveling at the wonder. DNA itself is the familiar double helix. It consists of a sequence of nucleotide bases (adenine, thymine, cytosine, and guanine) that encodes the instructions for proteins. To fit inside a microscopic nucleus, that DNA must be compacted dramatically. It wraps 1.67 times around an octamer of histone proteins. These include two each of H2A, H2B, H3, and H4. This forms a nucleosome core particle. These nucleosomes look like beads on a string under an electron microscope. Short linker DNA connects them. The whole assembly coils further into chromatin. This is the higher-order structure that fills the nucleus.



Here is where gene expression enters the picture. Gene expression is the process by which a gene's DNA sequence is transcribed into messenger RNA and then translated into a functional protein. For transcription to occur, the cell's machinery (RNA polymerase and transcription factors) must physically access the DNA. Nucleosomes act as gatekeepers. When chromatin is tightly packed (called heterochromatin), the DNA winds snugly around the histones. This blocks access. Genes stay silent. When the chromatin is loosely unpacked (euchromatin), the DNA unwinds. Promoters and enhancers become exposed. Gene expression ramps up. Nucleosome positioning, spacing, and stability thus fine-tune everything from cell differentiation to stress responses.

This is no accident of chance. Environmental factors such as diet, toxins, stress, temperature, and even maternal care directly influence how DNA wraps and unwraps. They do so primarily through two epigenetic mechanisms: DNA

methylation and histone modifications like acetylation (and methylation on the histones themselves). Epigenetics, from the Greek "epi" meaning "above," studies these heritable changes in gene expression that occur without altering the underlying DNA sequence. It is the software layer on top of the hardware code. This layer is responsive and reversible, yet stable enough to pass on when needed.

DNA Methylation: The Silencing Tag

DNA methylation involves adding a methyl group (CH₃) to the cytosine base. This usually occurs in CpG dinucleotides (cytosine followed by guanine). Enzymes called DNA methyltransferases (DNMTs) perform this task. They create 5-methylcytosine. In promoter regions (the "on switches" upstream of genes), methylation typically represses expression. How does this happen? It recruits methyl-binding proteins that attract histone deacetylases and other remodelers. These tighten the chromatin and physically block transcription factors. The nucleosomes pack closer. DNA becomes less accessible. The result is a silenced gene.

Environmental cues trigger this rapidly. Poor nutrition during early development, for instance, can hypermethylate genes involved in metabolism. This programs the body for scarcity. Toxins like endocrine disruptors (certain plastics or pesticides) alter DNMT activity. This leads to hypo- or hypermethylation at key loci. Stress hormones flood the system and shift methylation patterns on stress-response genes. These are not mutations. The sequence stays identical. Yet the wrapping changes. This adapts the organism's physiology to the new reality.

Histone Acetylation and Methylation: Loosening or Tightening the Spools

Histones are not passive spools. Their N-terminal "tails" protrude from the nucleosome and serve as hotspots for modification. Acetylation adds an acetyl group (CH₃CO) to lysine residues via histone acetyltransferases (HATs). Lysine carries a positive charge. Acetylation neutralizes that charge. This weakens the electrostatic attraction to the negatively charged DNA backbone. The nucleosome loosens. DNA unwraps slightly. Chromatin opens. Euchromatin forms. Transcription increases dramatically. Histone deacetylases (HDACs) reverse this process. They tighten the wrap and repress genes.

Environmental factors modulate this balance beautifully. Exercise or nutrient-rich diets boost HAT activity on genes for energy metabolism. Chronic stress or pollutants can recruit HDACs to inflammation-related genes. This dials expression down. Histone methylation is more nuanced. Adding methyl groups to specific lysines or arginines (via histone methyltransferases) can activate or

repress depending on the site. For example, trimethylation of histone H3 at lysine 4 (H3K4me3) marks active promoters. In contrast, H3K27me3 signals repression. These marks recruit remodeling complexes like SWI/SNF. These complexes slide, eject, or exchange nucleosomes. They dynamically reposition them in response to signals.

Nucleosome remodeling enzymes (ATP-dependent complexes) integrate these signals. They move histones along the DNA or evict them entirely. The result is precise, context-specific adaptation. A plant in drought might acetylate water-conservation genes while methylating growth genes. An animal facing famine adjusts its metabolism epigenetically. God's Incredible Adaptation Machine is not fragile. It is engineered for resilience.

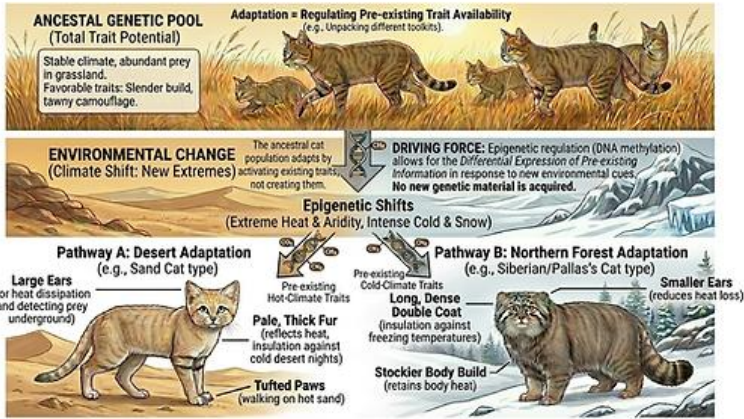
Epigenetics and the Inheritance of New Packaging

Here is where it becomes even more astonishing. These modifications are not always erased between generations. Epigenetics introduces the concept of heritability beyond the DNA sequence. Most epigenetic marks reset during gamete formation and early embryogenesis to prevent chaos. Yet when environmental changes are intense or prolonged (permanent shifts like sustained nutritional scarcity, toxin exposure across generations, or chronic stress), some marks persist through the germline. This is transgenerational epigenetic inheritance.

Studies in rodents exposed to vinclozolin (a fungicide) during gestation showed altered DNA methylation and histone patterns in sperm. These persisted to the F3 or F4 generation. They led to decreased fertility and disease susceptibility in unexposed descendants. Maternal diet or behavior in rats changes methylation on glucocorticoid receptor genes. This influences offspring stress responses for multiple generations. In humans, historical famines (such as the Dutch Hunger Winter) left epigenetic signatures on metabolism genes. These signatures remain detectable decades later in grandchildren. These are not Lamarckian "acquired traits" in the old flawed sense. They are built-in mechanisms. The packaging (nucleosome positioning, methylation, and acetylation states) gets inherited. This alters gene expression patterns without touching the code itself.

When the environment stabilizes in a new normal, these heritable epigenetic states allow populations to adapt faster than waiting for rare DNA mutations. It is rapid, reversible fine-tuning with the potential for long-term stability. Scripture speaks of kinds reproducing after their kind, with built-in variety and resilience. Epigenetics illuminates that design. It shows not blind evolution scrambling for survival, but a Creator's elegant system anticipating change.

EPIGENETIC REGULATION: EXPRESSING EXISTING GENETIC ADAPTATIONS IN CATS



What an incredible testimony to purposeful engineering! Environmental factors do not rewrite the DNA. They instruct God's Incredible Adaptation Machine on how to wrap it differently. This opens or closes access as needed. Methylation tightens the coils for silence when resources are scarce. Acetylation loosens them for activation when opportunity knocks. In permanent shifts, the new packaging travels forward. It equips offspring for the world they will inherit.

As we study these mechanisms, we see science aligning with the wonder of creation. DNA is not a brittle relic. It is a living, responsive archive wrapped in regulatory brilliance. This is adaptation as the Designer intended: flexible, faithful, and full of hope. In a world of uncertainty, God's Incredible Adaptation Machine reminds us that life was never left to chance. It was fearfully and wonderfully made to flourish.

May this glimpse into the nucleus stir awe in your heart. The same God who wraps DNA around histones with precision holds the universe, and your future, in His hands. True science always points back to Him.

God's Incredible Adaptation Machine: Part 2 (Adapting without New Genetic Info, Environment Changes Gene Expression, Transgenerational Epigenetics, Data is Lost Not Gained, Selective Breeding is Data Loss) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/god-s-incredible-adaptation-machine-part-2>

How Environmental Pressures Unlock Built-In Adaptability Without Adding New Genetic Information

Imagine a single environmental shift, a drought, a toxin, a famine, or a change in diet, triggering a quiet but profound response deep inside the nucleus of a cell. The DNA wrapping we explored in Part 1 does not just adjust for one lifetime. In God's Incredible Adaptation Machine, it can sometimes pass those precise adjustments forward. This is not evolution inventing new code. It is the Creator's elegant system of adaptability at work, using existing genetic information, fine-tuning its expression through epigenetic marks, and equipping offspring for a changing world. Yet even this remarkable mechanism reveals a profound truth: what looks like "new" characteristics is ultimately about the selective use and eventual loss of information already present, not the acquisition of novel genetic data that Darwinian evolution demands.

True science marvels here. It shows life was designed with foresight, resilience, and the capacity to thrive after the Flood, just as Genesis records kinds reproducing "after their kind" with built-in variety. Let's unpack how environmental changes alter gene expression, how those changes can echo across generations, and, crucially, why such traits are often lost over time. This process highlights adaptation as data management within a pre-loaded genome, not the upward climb of molecules-to-man evolution.

Environmental Changes Trigger Gene Expression, Not New DNA

When an organism encounters a sustained environmental pressure, poor nutrition, toxins, stress, or temperature extremes, the cell does not rewrite its DNA sequence. Instead, it adjusts the "wrapping" we described before. DNA methylation adds silencing tags to promoter regions, tightening chromatin and quieting certain genes. Histone modifications (acetylation to loosen, methylation to tighten or activate specific sites) reposition nucleosomes like skilled stagehands, exposing or hiding sections of the genetic script.

These changes alter which proteins are produced, reshaping metabolism, stress responses, growth, or even appearance, without a single letter of the DNA code changing. A plant under drought stress might acetylate water-conservation genes while methylating those for rapid growth. An animal facing famine reprograms metabolism for scarcity. This is real-time adaptability, engineered by God to respond to a post-Fall, changing world.

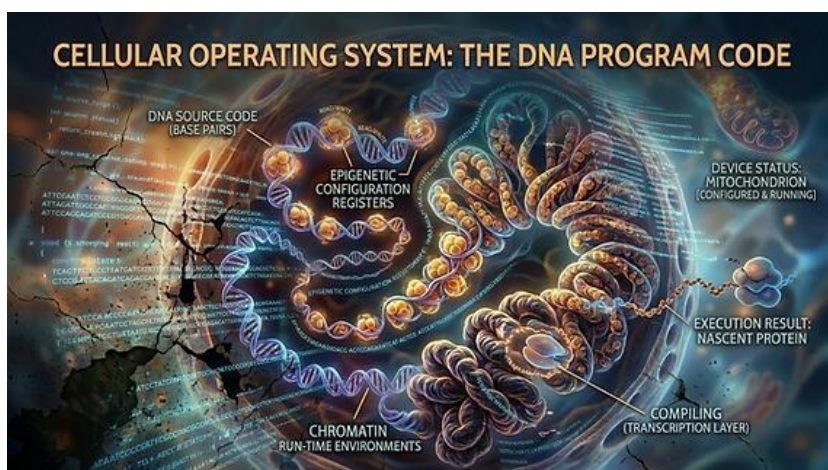
Passing the Packaging Forward: Transgenerational Epigenetic Inheritance

Here the wonder deepens. Most epigenetic marks are reset during egg and sperm formation and early embryonic development, restoring a clean slate for the next generation. But when pressures are intense or prolonged, spanning critical windows like gestation, the reprogramming is sometimes incomplete. A subset of marks persists through the germline, transmitting altered gene expression patterns to offspring.

This is transgenerational epigenetic inheritance. Classic studies illustrate it beautifully:

- Rodents exposed to the fungicide vinclozolin during pregnancy showed altered sperm methylation and histone patterns. These changes appeared in unexposed descendants up to the F3 or F4 generation, affecting fertility and disease susceptibility.
- Maternal diet or nurturing behavior in rats modifies methylation on stress-related genes (like the glucocorticoid receptor). Offspring inherit calmer or more anxious responses, with effects lasting multiple generations.
- In humans, the Dutch Hunger Winter (1944-45) left metabolic signatures on grandchildren of those who endured famine in the womb, higher risks of obesity and diabetes decades later. Similar patterns appear in studies of historical famines and even trauma (such as Holocaust survivors), where grandchildren show shifts in stress-response genes.

These are not Lamarck's outdated "acquired traits" passed by use or disuse. They are the Designer's built-in software layer, responsive, heritable under duress, yet stable enough to give populations a head start in a new "normal." No new information is created. The genome's pre-existing code is simply repackaged and expressed differently, allowing rapid adaptation within the created kind. Scripture's repeated emphasis on kinds reproducing faithfully aligns perfectly: the variety was loaded in from the beginning, ready to deploy when needed.



The Inevitable Loss: Why Traits Fade, Data Loss, Not Data Gain

Yet God's machine is not designed for endless accumulation or upward evolution. Epigenetic adaptations are typically temporary. Without continued environmental pressure, the marks are eventually erased during the natural reprogramming that occurs in gametes and early embryos. The trait fades. Offspring in later generations (often by F3 or F4) revert to the original expression patterns.

This is data loss, or more precisely, the restoration of the original informational potential, rather than the permanent acquisition of anything new. Studies on the agouti mouse provide a clear window: a mother's diet can methylate the agouti gene, producing yellow, obese offspring. These epigenetic changes pass to the next generation or two, but without reinforcement, the effect disappears in subsequent litters. The "new" characteristic (yellow coat, obesity predisposition) is lost. The system resets.

In the wild, this plays out across populations. A group of fish in a cave might silence eye-development genes epigenetically under darkness. If the environment later brightens, those marks can reset, and sighted offspring reappear. Or, over deeper time, selection may fix a loss-of-function mutation that permanently disables the trait, again, a net loss of genetic information and versatility. Antibiotic resistance in bacteria often works the same way: a mutation breaks a pump or enzyme, conferring survival in the drug's presence but reducing overall fitness elsewhere. No new functional information is gained; something is lost or broken.

This pattern matches what genetic entropy predicts: the genome degrades over generations as harmful mutations accumulate and beneficial (or neutral) information is culled or silenced. Evolution requires a mechanism to add

complex, specified information, new genes, new protein folds, new body plans. Epigenetic adaptation provides none of that. It shuffles, silences, or loses what God already engineered into the original kinds. The result? Remarkable short-term resilience followed by specialization and, ultimately, limits. Life thrives within boundaries, exactly as the Creator intended.

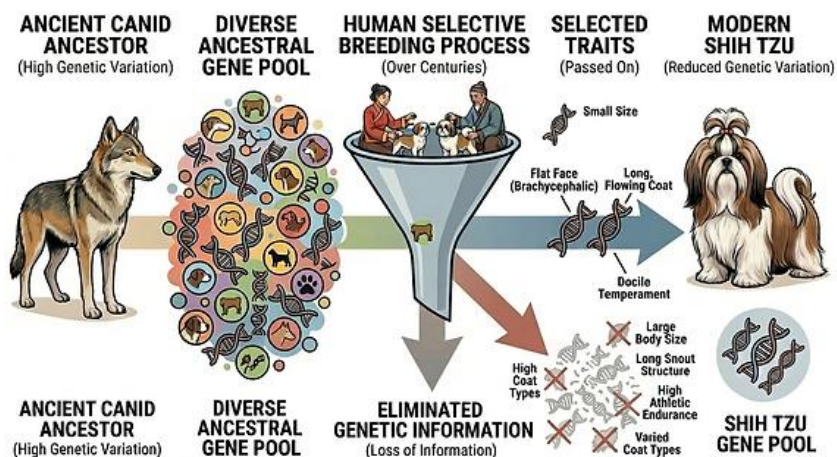


Selective Breeding: Demonstrating Data Loss in Action

Another clear example of genetic data loss occurs through selective breeding, often called artificial selection. Humans have practiced this for thousands of years, intentionally choosing which animals reproduce based on desired traits. Over many generations, this process consistently results in the loss of genetic information rather than the creation of new information.

Consider the Shih Tzu. The ancestors of modern dogs once carried a wide range of genetic information supporting varied sizes, muzzle lengths, coat types, and more. Through repeated selective breeding, humans chose pairs that displayed extremely short muzzles, small bodies, large eyes, and long flowing coats, the distinctive features of the Shih Tzu breed. Generation by generation, breeders avoided or removed dogs with unwanted characteristics, such as longer snouts, larger frames, or different coat lengths.

The process of creating the modern Shih Tzu through selective breeding follows a straightforward, repeatable scientific mechanism rooted in genetics and heritability. Breeders begin with a founding population drawn from ancient companion dogs (likely with roots in Tibetan and Chinese lines, including influences from breeds like the Lhasa Apso and Pekingese). These early dogs possessed broad genetic diversity for traits such as skull shape, body size, coat texture, and respiratory anatomy.



In each generation, breeders observe phenotypic variation (visible traits) among the puppies. They select only those individuals that most closely match the desired standard, such as a dramatically shortened muzzle (brachycephaly), compact body, prominent eyes, and luxurious double coat. Selected dogs are then paired for mating, while those exhibiting "unwanted" traits (for example, a longer snout that supports better airflow, larger overall size, or shorter coat) are excluded from breeding.

This human-driven choice acts as a powerful filter. Because many traits are polygenic (controlled by multiple genes) and heritable, the alleles (variant forms of genes) responsible for the preferred extreme features become more frequent in the breeding pool. At the same time, alleles supporting the discarded traits are progressively reduced in frequency or eliminated entirely from the closed gene pool. Over dozens of generations, this leads to a genetic bottleneck. The entire modern Shih Tzu population traces back to a very small number of foundation dogs (in some accounts, as few as 14 key individuals).

The outcome is measurable loss of genetic information and diversity. For instance, genes and regulatory sequences that once enabled a longer, more functional muzzle were selected against, resulting in the compressed airways characteristic of brachycephalic breeds. This shortening contributes directly to brachycephalic obstructive airway syndrome (BOAS), where narrowed nostrils, elongated soft palate, and restricted airways cause breathing difficulties, overheating, and other health issues. Similar losses affect eye health (due to shallow eye sockets) and overall robustness. Studies of dog breeds confirm that artificial selection for conformation traits routinely reduces genetic diversity, sometimes by 35 percent or more during breed formation, with closed stud books preventing the reintroduction of lost variation.

This stands in sharp contrast to Darwinian evolution. Evolution requires a process that adds new, complex, specified genetic information, such as entirely new genes or novel protein structures. Selective breeding, like epigenetic adaptation and natural trait loss, does the opposite. It works by selecting and removing existing information from the gene pool. It shows how selection can produce specialized varieties within a kind, but it never creates the fundamentally new biological information needed to turn one kind into another.

A Testimony to Foresight and Hope

Peer into the nucleus again, and you see more than chemistry. You witness divine engineering. Environmental changes do not invent; they activate the Adaptation Machine's pre-programmed responses. Characteristics pass forward through persistent epigenetic packaging when needed, giving descendants a tailored start. Yet those same traits are designed to be lost when the pressure lifts, preserving flexibility rather than locking in permanent change. This is not blind chance scrambling for survival. It is purposeful design anticipating a fallen world of flux, built for adaptation, not evolution.

In a culture quick to credit every shift to "evolution," true science keeps pointing back to the God of Genesis. He spoke kinds into existence with incredible adaptability woven in. He sustains the mechanisms that allow life to adjust, inherit useful tweaks, and then reset as needed. And in that reset lies quiet evidence of limits, reminders that we are fearfully and wonderfully made, not self-made over eons.

We hope this deeper look at God's Incredible Adaptation Machine stirs fresh awe. The same God who wraps DNA, tags it with methyl groups, and passes (or withholds) those tags across generations also holds your life. In uncertainty, His design brings hope. Life was never left to random mutation and deep time. It was crafted to flourish, within the beautiful boundaries He set.

Adaptation Not Evolution (Deceptive Evolution Rhetoric, Micro/Macro Fallacy) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/adaptation-not-evolution>



**“Human Evolution Didn’t Slow Down; We Were Just Missing the Signal”
(Live Science, by Kristina Killgrove)**

This [Live Science](#) article reports on a new Nature study of about 16,000 ancient and modern West Eurasian genomes. The article claims that natural selection has continued to shape human traits over the past 10,000 to 18,000 years. It highlights increases in alleles for lighter skin, red hair, HIV and leprosy resistance, and B blood type. It also notes decreases in male-pattern baldness and rheumatoid arthritis susceptibility. The piece frames these allele-frequency shifts as proof that human evolution did not slow down. It contradicts earlier views of limited recent change.

While the underlying data showing changes in existing genetic variants under selection may be accurate as raw observation, the article’s interpretation is profoundly misleading. It is rooted in a materialistic and anti-Biblical presupposition. It repeatedly invokes evolution and natural selection as creative forces driving human evolution. In reality, these are textbook examples of adaptation. They represent the sorting and expression of pre-existing, God-designed genetic information within the human kind. No new genetic information was created. No novel traits arose from nothing. This is not evolution in any Darwinian sense.

Misuse of “Evolution” as Deceptive Rhetoric

The article and the study it promotes deliberately blur the line by calling allele-frequency changes evolution. Researchers like first author Ali Akbari state that human evolution did not slow down; we were just missing the signal. The piece describes natural selection acting on 479 gene variants to produce evolutionary change. This is classic equivocation. Biblical creation affirms abundant variation within created kinds, as described in Genesis 1:11-12, 21, 24-25, and 27. This includes built-in genetic diversity for survival and adaptation. After the Flood, the animals disembarked from the Ark, according to Genesis 8:17-19. They rapidly expressed existing genetics to fill diverse post-Flood environments. Examples include lighter or darker fur and varied beak shapes. This occurred without any

new information arising or one kind transforming into another. The same principle applies to humans descending from Noah's family, as recorded in Genesis 9-10. Post-Babel dispersion in Genesis 11 and subsequent environmental pressures would have selected for traits like skin tone suited to latitude and sunlight, for example, vitamin D synthesis. This matches exactly what the study observes. These are adaptations, not evolution.

The intent behind labeling it evolution is clear. It seeks to smuggle Darwinian common descent into everyday language. It implies that small changes prove the possibility of large-scale transformation from molecules to man. This is not neutral science. It is worldview propaganda. Scripture declares humans specially created in God's image, according to Genesis 1:26-27 and 2:7. Humans are not the product of blind processes. To call observable variation human evolution is to deny the Creator while borrowing His designed mechanisms.

The Micro- versus Macro-Evolution Fallacy

The article does not explicitly use the term microevolution. However, it relies on the same sleight-of-hand that popular science writing often employs. It presents observable adaptation, what creationists call microevolution, as evidence that macro or Darwinian evolution is viable. This is a logical fallacy. Adaptation via natural selection is real and God-ordained. It culls harmful variants and favors those already present in the genome, preserving the kind. It does not generate the massive increases in genetic information required for one kind to become another. Examples include reptiles to birds or ape-like ancestors to humans. Mutations overwhelmingly degrade information. They do not build new, functional, complex systems.

Equating the two is like claiming that a dog breeder producing varied coat colors proves wolves can become whales. The study's findings involve shifts in frequencies of existing alleles for pigmentation, immunity, and hair loss. These fit perfectly within the Biblical model of a young creation with rich genetic potential at the start. This was followed by rapid post-Flood adaptation. The findings do not support molecules-to-man evolution. That process would require vast new information over deep time. The article's conclusion that evolution continued strongly is simply the researchers' naturalistic bias imposed on data that actually confirm design and adaptation.

Theological and Scientific Implications

Biblically, this matters because evolutionism undermines the doctrine of creation, the Fall, and redemption. If humans are merely the latest output of an ongoing

evolutionary process, then there is no historical Adam, no original sin, and no need for a Savior, as explained in Romans 5:12-19 and 1 Corinthians 15:21-22. The article's narrative quietly erodes this foundation while pretending to report neutral science.

In sum, this piece is not advancing knowledge but advancing an anti-Biblical agenda. It takes God's ingenious design for adaptability, evident in the post-Ark animals and in Noah's descendants, and credits it to evolution. True science aligns with Scripture: adaptation is real; Darwinian evolution is a fiction. The data here beautifully illustrate the former and do nothing to rescue the latter. Readers should approach such headlines with discernment. They should test all things against the unchanging Word of God, according to 1 Thessalonians 5:21 and Acts 17:11.

Whales: The “Fox-Like Stepping Stone to Whales” Narrative Is Classic Evolutionary Overreach by Dr. Robert Wright

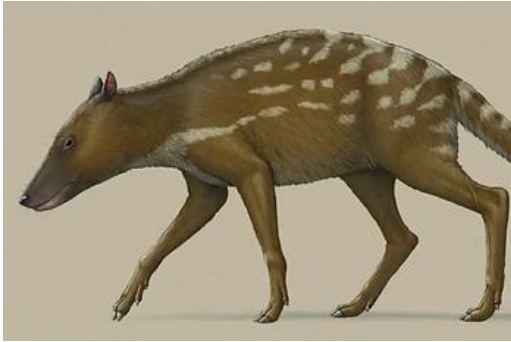
<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-fox-like-stepping-stone-to-whales-narrative-is-classic-evolutionary-overreach>

The recent article from [BBC Wildlife Magazine](#) presents a familiar story: a small, fox-sized (or raccoon- or deer-like) animal called *Indohyus* is billed as a “bizarre stepping stone in the evolution of whales.” It looked nothing like a whale, yet supposedly shared key features—particularly a thickened ear bone (the involucrum) useful for underwater hearing and denser bones that may have acted as ballast—allowing it to spend time in water while still walking on land. From this, the claim is made that whales, dolphins, and porpoises descended from such land-dwelling artiodactyls (even-toed ungulates related to hippos, pigs, and deer) tens of millions of years ago.

This is a textbook example of evolutionary bias in action. Similar claims have been made for other fossils, and the pattern is the same: find a few anatomical similarities, interpret them through the assumed lens of common ancestry, fill the enormous gaps with storytelling, and present the result as settled science. The evidence does not support the leap.

What the Fossil Actually Shows—and What It Does Not

Indohyus was a small terrestrial or semi-aquatic mammal. Researchers note ear structures and bone density that overlap with features seen in early cetaceans. That is interesting comparative anatomy. It does not demonstrate a transitional series leading to modern whales.



Indohyus

The same pattern appeared with *Pakicetus*. Early evolutionary diagrams and textbooks presented it as a semi-aquatic “first whale” based on triangular teeth and a bony ear wall. When a more complete skeleton was recovered in 2001, it proved to be a fully terrestrial animal. Yet it continues to appear in many popular and educational materials as the starting point of the whale sequence. The *Indohyus* story follows the same script: selective features are elevated into an evolutionary pathway while the vast morphological distance is minimized.

Whales and dolphins (cetaceans) are fully aquatic mammals. They are warm-blooded, breathe air, give live birth, nurse with milk, and have hair. Their propulsion comes from a powerful, muscular tail and horizontal flukes that move up and down. Land mammals and fish move their tails side to side. Converting a land quadruped’s locomotor system into the whale’s vertical stroke would require radical reorganization of the spine, pelvis, musculature, and reproductive anatomy. As noted in the San Diego whales and dolphins lesson, simply reversing the direction of tail movement in an animal evolving from a wolf-like or ungulate-like form would crush the pelvis and severely disrupt reproductive organs. That is not a minor adaptive tweak; it is a fundamental redesign.

Homology and “Vestigial” Structures Do Not Prove the Story

Evolutionary accounts routinely treat structural similarities (homology) as proof of common descent. The flipper of a whale and the limb of a land mammal share certain bone arrangements, so the inference is that they share distant grandparents. A more straightforward explanation is available: creatures made from the same materials, living in the same world, breathing the same air, and

operating under the same physical laws will often show parallel solutions. Common design by a common Creator accounts for the similarities without requiring millions of years of transitional intermediates that are never found intact.

The same applies to the so-called vestigial pelvis and hind-limb remnants in whales and dolphins. These are frequently cited as leftover evidence of land ancestry. Research from the University of Southern California and the Natural History Museum of Los Angeles County has shown that the pelvic bones serve as attachment points for muscles critical to reproduction in both male and female cetaceans. They are functional, not useless leftovers waiting to disappear. Parallel discoveries have repeatedly shown that structures once labeled “vestigial” (including the human appendix) turn out to have important roles. The vestigial argument is an argument from incomplete knowledge dressed up as positive evidence for evolution.

Biblical Reality and Observable Design

Genesis records that God created the great sea creatures (*tannin*) on Day 5, along with every living creature that moves in the waters. The same creatures appear throughout Scripture. Jesus refers to Jonah’s experience with the “whale” (*ketos*, the root of our word for cetaceans) as a historical parallel to His own death and resurrection (Matthew 12:40). The Hebrew of Jonah speaks of a “great fish” prepared by the Lord; the precise identity is secondary to the point that a large sea creature was specially provided for the purpose.

Gray whales undertake some of the longest migrations of any mammal—roughly 12,000 miles round-trip. Baleen whales filter enormous volumes of water with specialized plates. Toothed whales navigate and hunt with sophisticated echolocation. These are not half-finished products of gradual natural selection; they are fully integrated systems that function at a high level of efficiency from the start. The vertical fluke, the blowhole, the specialized circulatory and respiratory adaptations for deep diving, the nursing of live young underwater—all of these point to purposeful design rather than a stepwise climb from a fox-sized land animal.

The Pattern of Bias

Articles like the one in question follow a predictable template. A fossil with a few interesting traits is announced as a “missing link” or “stepping stone.” Popular media amplify the claim. Textbooks and documentaries lock it in. When later discoveries complicate or overturn the earlier reconstruction (as with *Pakicetus*),

the narrative is rarely corrected with equal energy. The assumption that whales must have evolved from land mammals remains fixed; only the candidate ancestor changes.

Creationists are not required to deny every anatomical similarity or every fossil. We are required to notice when the interpretive leap far exceeds the data.

Indohyus was a small, interesting mammal that spent time in water. It was not a whale in the making. Whales and dolphins display the hallmarks of creatures specially equipped for life in the sea—exactly what we would expect if the God who made the waters also filled them with living creatures according to their kinds on Day 5.

Whales: More Evidence on Whales Not Evolving, Creation, Homology Assumptions, & Jonah by Dr. Robert Wright

From <https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/dr-bob-visits-san-diego-whales-and-dolphins>.

Whales are amazing creatures. Every year, gray whales like the ones we saw undertake one of the longest migrations of any mammal, traveling 12,000 miles round-trip from their feeding grounds in the Arctic to calve and breed in the Baja lagoons, and then back again.



Whales, dolphins, and porpoises belong to a group of animals called cetaceans. Despite living in the water, they are not fish; they are mammals, just like dogs, elephants, mice and kangaroos. There are certain features that scientists use to distinguish mammals from other animals. They must be:

1. warm-blooded,
2. breathe air
3. give birth to live young
4. nurse their young with milk and
5. have hair.

Whales swim with the aid of their muscular tail and forked tail fluke that moves up and down to propel them forward.

When a wolf wags its tail, it swishes its tail from side to side. And fish move their tails from side to side. A whale moves its tail vertically. If a whale evolved from a wolf (or other mammal) this small change in direction would involve dramatic changes in physiology. Simply changing the direction of tail movement would crush the pelvis of an animal that was evolving a modified tail movement, and would have significant impact on its reproductive organs. The whale moves its tail vertically because God designed it to.

There are several different kinds of whales:



First are the *mysticetes*, or baleen whales. This group contains the largest animals that have ever existed, like the gray whale, blue whale and the humpback whale. Weighing 173 tons and measuring almost 100 feet, the blue whale is the largest known animal to have ever existed. Instead of teeth, these whales have rows of long plates in their mouths covered in bristle-like structures. These are called baleen plates, and the whales use them to filter small animals, mostly krill, from the surrounding water.

Second, are the *odontocetes*, or toothed whales. This group contains dolphins, porpoises, orcas, sperm whales, narwhals, and belugas. The sperm whale is the largest, measuring up to 66 feet from snout to tail fluke and weighing more than 45 tons. Toothed whales are well-known for their ability to navigate with sound (echolocation), allowing them to locate food, potential threats, and other whales, even when visibility is low.

Many theories have been created to support the anti-God theory of evolution, and apply it to whales. One of the first animals encountered in the evolutionary series that anti-Biblical scientists point to is *Pakicetus*. This animal is often included in cartoon diagrams that claim to demonstrate whale evolution. Initially *Pakicetus* was presumed to be a semi-aquatic mammal based on having triangular teeth and a bony wall around its ears. In 2001, an almost complete skeleton of *Pakicetus* was discovered, and it was discovered that it was an entirely terrestrial animal. In spite of this fact, it is still listed as the first whale in most textbooks.

Homology

One frequently cited proof of evolution comes from the comparison of similar body structures of different living organisms. Known as homology, evolutionists argue that similarities among living things prove that living things share a common ancestor. For example, since the flipper of a whale and the foot of a dog have certain likenesses, they propose that they share the same great-great-great...grandparents (going back, supposedly, many millions of years)

However, such similarities should be expected among creatures that were created from the same materials to live in the same world. They breathe the same air, drink the same water, eat the same food, live on the same land, and use the same five senses to function in the world. Common features among living things make perfect sense if we all share a common Creator.

In an effort to support the failed idea of homology, evolutionary biologists like to point to vestigial structures such as the pelvis and hind limbs of whales and dolphins as compelling evidence for biological evolution. If you've taken a biology course or seen television specials on evolution, you've probably heard people discuss the whale pelvis and explain why it serves as evidence for common descent. But new work by researchers from the University of Southern California (USC) and the Natural History Museum (NHM) of Los Angeles County has provided a way for creationists to explain cetaceans' small pelvis and hind limbs. Their work indicates that the whale pelvis isn't vestigial. They demonstrate that it serves as an attachment point for muscles that both male and female cetaceans need to reproduce. According to Matthew Dean, one of the authors of the study, "Everyone's always assumed that if you gave whales and dolphins a few more million years of evolution, the pelvic bones would disappear. But it appears that's not the case."

This is not the first time scientists have discovered the usefulness of supposed "vestigial structures." As Dean also noted, "Our research really changes the way we think about evolution of whale pelvic bones in particular, but more generally about structures we call 'vestigial.' As a parallel, we are now learning that our

appendix is actually quite important in several immune processes, not a functionally useless structure.”

Creation

Genesis specifically states that God created whales on Day 5. It is interesting that the original Hebrew word translated as “whales” in Genesis is *tannin*. This word has no known parallel in modern Hebrew and is difficult to translate. However, it has often been translated elsewhere in the King James Version as “dragon,” “great sea creatures” in the English Standard Version, and “reptile” in the Septuagint text. *Tannin* is used again in Exodus 7:9-12 to refer to the creature Aaron’s staff became: a serpent. Clearly these animals had a number of unique characteristics that included animals we would recognize as whales, as well as others we might call dinosaurs.

Jesus says in Matthew 12:40, “For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.” In Matthew 12:40 the key Greek word is *ketos*, which in Latin becomes *cetos*. This is the basis for the current term Cetaceans, a class of animals that includes whales, dolphins, and porpoises.

These creatures have a continued presence through the New Testament. In the Book of Revelation, John “heard every creature in heaven and on earth,” including those “in the sea,” singing, “To the one seated on the throne and to the Lamb be blessing and honor and glory and might forever and ever!” (Rev. 5:13).

Jonah

Perhaps the most famous whale in all scripture is the one that swallowed the Prophet Jonah when he refused to go to Nineveh. How is this possible? The Book of Jonah doesn’t specifically mention a whale. It says, “The Lord provided a large fish to swallow up Jonah; and Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights” (Jonah 1:17). The Hebrew text of Jonah 2:1 actually reads *dag gadol*, or “great fish” rather than a technical term for “whale.” In this case the term fish refers to the environment the animal lived in, not specifically its kind. It could have been a whale, it could have been a massive fish in the English sense. Since Hebrew possessed no special word for “whale,” it is clear only that a large ocean creature was prepared by God to perform this special task.

The story of Jonah is very complicated, but the fact that Christ points to it as a model for His death and resurrection should put to rest any suggestions that the story is simply myth. There is much to learn about Jonah from this story. As “the sea grew more and more tempestuous,” the crew of the ship Jonah sailed on

asked, “What shall we do to you, that the sea may quiet down for us?” (Jonah 1:11). Jonah responded, “Pick me up and hurl me into the sea” (Jonah 1:12). This hardly seems like a coward.

But instead, the men tried to get to shore by rowing harder. They even called out “O Lord, let us not perish for this man’s life, and lay not on us innocent blood, for you, O Lord, have done as it pleased you” (Jonah 1:14). After this, they threw Jonah overboard.

Jonah did not try to avoid Nineveh because he was afraid to go there. Jonah’s reason for running was that he did not like the Assyrians. Assyria was an idolatrous, proud, and ruthless nation bent on world conquest and had been a threat to Israel for a long time. At the end of his story, Jonah states his reason for resistance: “That is why I was so quick to flee to Tarshish. I knew that you are a gracious and compassionate God, slow to anger and abounding in love, a God who relents from sending calamity” (Jonah 4:2). In other words, Jonah wanted Nineveh to be destroyed. He felt they deserved God’s judgment. Jonah didn’t want to see God’s mercy extended to his enemies, and he knew in his heart that God’s intention was to show mercy. He knew that soon Nineveh, the capital of Assyria would destroy Israel.

Nineveh had long been an enemy of Judah and Israel and in 722 B.C., the Assyrians defeated the northern kingdom of Israel, destroying its capital, Samaria. In 701 B.C., the Assyrians nearly conquered Jerusalem, the capital of Judah.

There have been historic accounts of people being swallowed by whales and surviving the experience. One man, Marshall Jenkins, was swallowed alive by a sperm whale in 1771 and survived. Another incident concerns James Bartley. In 1891, Bartley was swallowed by a sperm whale that his whaling crew had harpooned. The whale slipped away, was found and killed a day or so later. Bartley was found alive, but unconscious, in the stomach of the whale. He was revived and in a few weeks regained his health.

But there is no necessity for Jonah to have survived the experience. The fact that Christ used Jonah's experience in the belly of the "great fish" as a parallel to His time in the tomb, leaves the possibility that Jonah did in fact die, and was miraculously restored to allow him to fulfill the mission God had given him.

Whales occupy a special place in God's creation, and they are beautiful to observe in the ocean. All of God's creation demonstrates God's power and testify of Him.

Scripture References

- "Now the Lord prepared a great fish to swallow Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights" **Jonah 1:17**
- "For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth." **Matthew 12:40**
- "And God said, 'Let the waters swarm with swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the expanse of the heavens.' So God created the great sea creatures and every living creature that moves, with which the waters swarm, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, 'Be fruitful and multiply and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.'"" **Genesis 1:20-22**

Note: Once a plant evolution expert said the best evidence he was aware of for evolution was the whale pelvis. Evolution is a shell game – even the experts don't find their own fields very convincing. They always point elsewhere. End note.

When a Horse is Not a Horse by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/when-a-horse-is-not-a-horse>

At **The Flood Museum**, we examine fossils through the lens of biblical history, revealing how they affirm the account of a worldwide Flood in Genesis 6-9. The so-called "primitive horse" fossil nicknamed "Olive," discovered in the Green River Formation near Kemmerer, Wyoming, is a prime example. While evolutionists hail it as an early equine ancestor, closer scrutiny shows it's not a horse at all but an extinct creature rapidly buried amid catastrophic conditions—conditions matching the biblical Flood's massive sediment deposition and rapid entombment of life forms.



Discovery of "Olive" in the Green River Formation

In the spring of 2015, brothers Mark and Mike Oliver unearthed "Olive" while digging in a private fossil fish quarry near Kemmerer, Wyoming. This specimen, a nearly complete skeleton of what was labeled *Protorohippus venticolus*, measures about two feet long and includes the skull, all four feet, and even five embedded fish fossils on the same slab. The find occurred in the Fossil Butte Member of the Green River Formation, a site renowned for its exquisite preservation. Initially mistaken for an unusual fossil, it was carefully extracted and prepared, revealing one of only two known complete skeletons of this type.



The Green River Formation itself spans over 25,000 square miles across Wyoming, Colorado, and Utah, with sediments up to thousands of feet thick in places. Near Kemmerer, the deposits include finely laminated shales—dark

organic layers alternating with light inorganic ones—traditionally interpreted as annual varves from ancient lakes. However, from a biblical viewpoint, these layers represent rapid pulses of sediment during the Flood, not slow seasonal accumulation over millions of years. Volcanic ash interbeds and mixed marine-freshwater indicators further suggest catastrophic mixing of environments.

Misidentification as a "Primitive Horse": Anatomical Evidence Against Equine Ancestry

Evolutionists quickly classified "Olive" as a "primitive horse" or "dawn horse" ancestor, fitting it into their linear equine evolution narrative from small, multi-toed creatures to modern single-toed horses. Yet, substantial evidence shows *Protorohippus* is not a horse at all but an extinct non-equine mammal, perhaps akin to a hyrax or other browsing creature. Creationists have long argued that such "early horses" like *Eohippus* (*Hyracotherium*), to which *Protorohippus* is similar, lack true equine connections.

Key anatomical differences include:

- **Feet and Toes:** Modern horses (*Equus*) have a single toe per foot, adapted for speed on grasslands. "Olive," however, had four toes on the front feet and three on the back, with padded soles like a dog's—not the hard hoof of a horse. This multi-toed structure suits tree-climbing or forest browsing, not equine galloping. Even some supposed later "horses" like *Mesohippus* and *Merychippus* retained three toes, showing a bush of variations, not a linear progression.
- **Vertebrae and Ribs:** Modern horses typically have 18 thoracic vertebrae and 18 pairs of ribs, supporting a large frame for endurance. "Olive" and similar creatures had a different vertebral formula, with variations in rib count and structure that align more with non-horse mammals. For instance, *Hyracotherium* had 18 thoracic vertebrae but a shorter, more flexible spine suited to a small, agile browser, not a grazer.
- **Teeth and Size:** "Olive" was dog-sized (about 2 feet long), with low-crowned teeth for leafy diets, unlike the high-crowned, cement-covered teeth of grazing horses. This indicates a forest dweller, not an equine precursor.

These features debunk the evolutionary "horse series" as an artificial construct, not a true lineage. In biblical terms, God created distinct kinds (Genesis 1:24-25), and "Olive" represents variation within a non-horse kind post-Fall but pre-Flood.



Olive in The Flood Museum's Fossil Evidence Exhibit

Association with Fish Fossils: Proof of Rapid, Catastrophic Burial

"Olive" was found embedded with five fish fossils, part of the Green River's vast fish graveyards containing millions of specimens. Many fish are preserved in exquisite detail, some caught mid-meal—swallowing other fish—or in mass mortality layers. Such preservation demands instantaneous burial to prevent decay or scavenging—fish rot within days if not buried.



This denies slow accumulation in a post-Flood lake or over millions of years. Varves, claimed as annual, can form rapidly in catastrophic settings, as experiments show multiple layers depositing quickly. The mixing of land mammals like "Olive" with aquatic fish points to Flood waters sweeping ecosystems together.



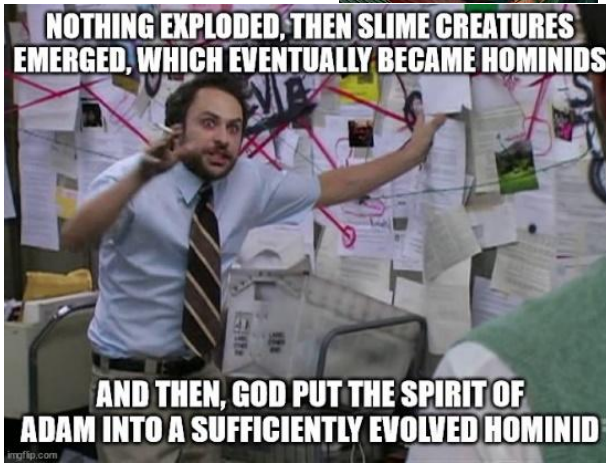
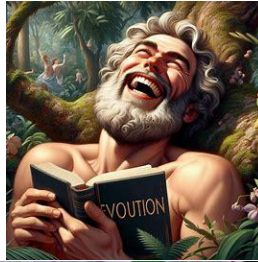
Dr. Wright at the Kemmerer, Wyoming Site Where Olive was Discovered

Tying It to Biblical History: The Global Flood's Truth

Genesis describes a year-long Flood that destroyed all land life except those on the Ark (Genesis 7:19-23). The Green River sediments—vast, finely layered, and fossil-rich—record this catastrophe's rapid deposition phases. "Olive" and the fish exemplify creatures overwhelmed by surging waters, buried alive in sediment pulses. This affirms the Bible's historical accuracy, countering evolutionary myths of slow change.

Visit **The Flood Museum** to explore more fossils witnessing Noah's Flood. God's Word stands firm—let the rocks cry out!

PART 5: THE APE-MAN HOAX



Human-Like Ancestors?

Consider these statements from the “**Let’s Talk about Science & Religion**” authors claiming there were pre-Adamic people:

“why are homo sapiens (us) the only species left among our human-like ancestors?” pg. 39

“all living things on earth (both plants and animals) share a common ancestor.” pg. 48

“...strong evidence that we all shared a common beginning.” pg. 53

“...humans and animals hint at an evolutionary past.” pg. 53

"...there are at least 21 known species of hominin (ancestors of our species) that once existed on our planet dating back 5 million years. Modern Homo sapiens first appeared around 300,000 years ago." -pg. 62

"...these specimens are physically different enough from us (using the phylogenetic-species concept) to be considered a different species." pg. 62

"Given the evidence, science suggests the human body is a product of evolution." pg. 62

On page 62 the LTSR authors claim we have 300 "**Homo neanderthal**" specimens and 18 "**Homo naledi**" ("the latest hominid discovery") specimens which lived 400,000 years ago.



Now let's consider some '*dangerous*' alternative views.

In truth, there are as many types of skeletons as there are people in this world. God is creative and has designed many different people. It's only a matter of time before these claims will be exposed as frauds like the others. How can we be so sure? Because they contradict the word of God. Hominid claims always turn out to be merely a variety of apes, human pygmies, and ancient humans. The list of proven hoaxes in this field is long and growing.

Consider these known frauds that were perpetuated by modern science to promote evolution: **Pitldown Man** was found to be the Jawbone of an orangutan with fragments of a modern human skull. It was praised as the missing link 40 years before the hoax was discovered. 500 academic journal articles were written on it. **Nebraska man** was also used as evidence for evolution for a long time. All they

had of him was one tooth, which they eventually realized was the tooth of a pig. **Hilton Man**'s jaw was broken, and the teeth were filed down to fool people. It was in textbooks as proof of evolution for decades until proved a fraud in the 50s.



(Images: [Piltdown Man – Wikipedia](#) & [Nebraska Man - Wikipedia](#))

They didn't find humanoid bones and attempt to figure out what they were—it was the other way around. First, they came up with the theory, and then they went hunting for bones that would support it.

When they find skeletons of slightly different bones, they are quick to claim them as non-human. But this can't be the only possibility. Different teeth can simply be an indication of a different diet or habitat. Further, rickets, arthritis, poor diet, and other medical conditions can make skeletons look different. There is significant variation in people and in monkeys - some are big, some small, etc., and this is not evidence of intermediate species.



(Image: [Kyphosis - Wikipedia](#))

Consider the following modern brow ridges. Brow ridges continue to grow throughout life.

Some people simply have differently shaped heads than others. There is no evidence of human-like ancestors; rather, there is a basic sampling of human diversity.



(Images: [Brow ridge - Wikipedia](#))

Remember that the patriarchs before the flood had tremendously long lifespans and would have developed over that time different skulls than what evolutionists consider ‘human.’ The long lifespans are more evidence that we aren’t evolving from lower lifeforms; we are falling from higher. Another puzzle of history is that the bible clearly states that there were giants in the past. What did their skeletons look like? Perhaps they, too, falling beyond mainstream science’s arbitrary parameters for what can be human bones, have been classed as non-human by scientists.

Consider also that various cultures arbitrarily deformed skulls and other body parts, leaving us with some strange-looking skulls.



(Images: [Artificial cranial deformation - Wikipedia](#))

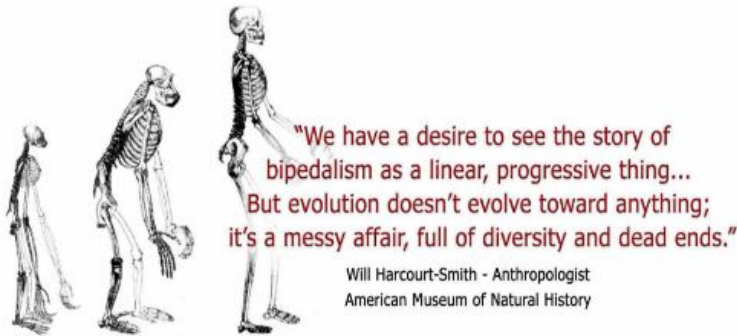
Consider these scientists' statements about the flimsy research behind supposedly fossils of human-like ancestors:

“A detailed and **continuous record of transition between species is missing**, those neat sedimentary layers, as Gould noted time and again, never revealing precisely the phenomena that Darwin proposed to explain... ‘**most of the fossil record does not support a strictly gradualistic account**’ ... precisely what Darwin’s theory demands.” (David Berlinski, educator and former professor at Columbia University)

“One of the major stumbling blocks is the **lack of evidence** concerning fossil forms and the **ignorance about the direction of evolutionary trends and rates** of evolution. This creates a serious problem, since **without data, weighting of**

characters in classification is largely subjective, and a truly evolutionary classification will never be a reality." Frank E. Poirier, Fossil Evidence, p12; Universal Model 2 p180

"We have a desire to see the story of **bipedalism as a linear, progressive** thing... but **evolution doesn't evolve toward anything**; it's a **messy** affair, full of diversity and dead ends." (Will Harcourt-Smith – Anthropologist, American Museum of Natural History)



"...the human family of species are arranged in an orderly procession from **primitive forms up to modern Man**. But such scenarios are **subjective**...they are **unscientific**." (Henry Gee)



(Images from Universal Model 2)

Darwin knew the challenges the fossil record presented to his theory, even in his day, and noted it when he stated: "There is another and allied difficulty, which is much more serious. I allude to the manner in which **many species in several of the main divisions of the animal kingdom suddenly appear in the lowest known fossiliferous rocks**. Most of the arguments which have convinced me that all the existing species of the same group are descended from a single progenitor, apply with nearly

equal force to the earliest known species.” (Charles Darwin, The Origin of Species, Chapter 10, On The Imperfection Of The Geological Record)

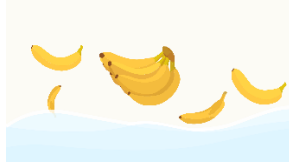
Darwin also admitted that the fossil record isn't what evolution paints it to be: "...the geological record is far more imperfect than most geologists believe.” (Charles Darwin)

Joseph Fielding Smith commented on the bazar methods used to gather supposed hominid specimens. He said, "One of the strange things about the arguments and deductions for descent of man from the lowest forms of life is the scatter-brain way in which the "evidence" is obtained. To illustrate the point: The Piltdown skull and tooth were found in or near, Piltdown, Sussex, England, and out of these the vivid imaginations of certain so-called scientists create a whole race of men; the Trinil Ape-Man, was manufactured from fragments of skull and found at Trinil, Java, clear around on the other side of the world; then one stage higher, the Neanderthal Man was manufactured from a portion of skull and a few other fragments of bones, found at the Neanderthal gorge near Westphalia, Germany; and as we approach further towards the Homo perfection the discovery is made from bones found at Cro Magnon, Dordogne, France. These poor fellows must have wandered about a good bit, from England to Java, to Germany to France, and if we carry it further to deserts of China and even to parts of the Western Hemisphere. It is too bad that these poor fellows did not keep all their bones in one place so that the evolutionists would not have to be put to the inconveniences of manufacturing the missing parts. However, any man who can manufacture a Man from an Amoeba through countless stages covering millions of years, is capable of doing most any thing. The numerous imaginary pictures of this process published by the gentlemen in the American Museum of Natural History and by writers of numerous textbooks circulated and used in our public schools and colleges reveal the startling story that we have reached an age when good clear reasoning and logical deductions are entirely out of place." (Joseph Fielding Smith, Man: His Origin & Destiny, Ch. 8 The Hypothesis of Organic Evolution pt. 2)

Here are some highlights of enriching points against specific hominid claims from the **Genesis Impact presentation** by **Genesis Apologetics**:

98% Similar DNA Claim

We aren't 98% similar to chimps in our DNA. It's much lower. And the simple comparison of genetics understates our differences. We also have high similarity genetically to many other living things. Consider the following:



- Chimps' genomes are 4.3% bigger. This doesn't match the claim of 98% similar DNA.
- They intentionally left out a lot of information. The **real similarity is between 66 and 86%**, which doesn't allow for the hundreds of millions of changes in the time allotted for evolution.
- We also have similar genetic similarities to cows and dogs and corn. (About **40-60% similar with bananas.**)
- (Go figure, the same engineer used similar coding for his various creations!)

Additional points:

- The 98% similarity figure **ignores** roughly **18% of the chimp** genome and **25% of the human** genome that do not align well.
- Differences include **35 million** single nucleotide differences and **over 40 million insertion/deletion** events (indels).

The general lack of 'hominid' fossils



- Lucy is about 3 million years old. The claimed **hominid fossils from 2 to 3 million years ago fit in a shoe box**. This doesn't give much evidence of transitions.

- Darwin admitted the lack of transitional fossils to be a strong point against his theory.
- **All of the hominid fossils could fit in the back of a pickup truck. This is all the evidence they have for the entire supposed human line.**
- The leading paleontologist on hominids says there are **more scientists studying this than there are findings** of it.
- He says the **skulls you see on National Geographic** are incredibly rare, there are **only a few dozen** of those; most of what they work with are tiny fragments of incomplete findings.

Ardi hominid claim



Image: Ardi: Paleontological collections of the National Museum of Ethiopia (Sailko, CC BY 3.0 <<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/3.0/>>, via Wikimedia Commons)

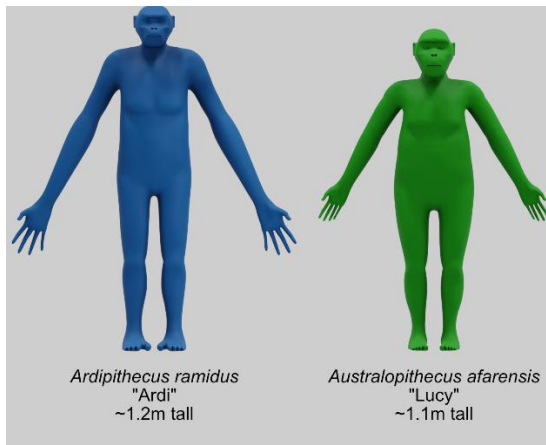
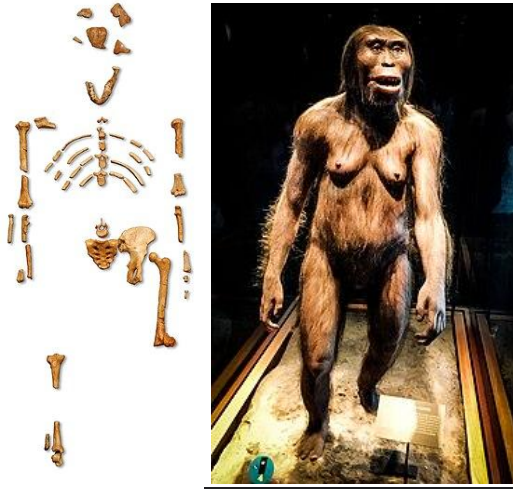


Image: Ardi and Lucy Reconstruction Comparison (Keith Chan, CC BY-SA 4.0 <<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0>>, via Wikimedia Commons)

- Ardi has the **same brain size** as a chimp.
- They ran 11 different models of configurations, and **chose the one that fit their theory**.
- Based on what they selected from these 11 models, they say it walked up right because the vertebrae fit into the skull. However, the **bones are missing the neck vertebrae**, and missing the complete base of the skull where it would fit in.
- They say it must have walked up right based on the curve of the spine, but they are **missing the spine**, which they just estimated based on the pelvis.
- The **pelvis wasn't intact** either. They reconstructed what they thought the pelvis would look like, and based on that, they made what they thought the (missing) spine would look like.
- It was digitally **reconstructed 14 times before they chose** the one they liked.
- **Many scientists disagree** with the claims that this creature **walked upright**, citing a **lack of evidence** and **excessive speculation**.
- Her **hands and feet look ape-like**.
- The specimen clearly has the head etc. of a chimp, and they base their speculation that it was an upright walker on a bump on the pelvis.
- From 100 bones over a **30 ft** radius.
- The picture they showcase is an **enhanced computer animation**; the actual bones found were in **terrible condition**.

- It took **3 years** to dig up and **10 years** to put together. **None** of the bones were found **connected** together.

Lucy (Australopithecus) hominid claim



(Images: [Lucy \(Australopithecus\) - Wikipedia](#))



(All “400 specimens” of Lucy’s kind fit in a little bucket! Yet evolutionists make videos showing whole clans of these things as though we had found 400 complete skeletons!)

- Lucy is considered the best hominid evidence and is paraded in textbooks as such.
- It is claimed that they found 400 of these but what they mean is not 400 specimens, but **400 bone pieces**.
- **30%** of those pieces are **teeth**.

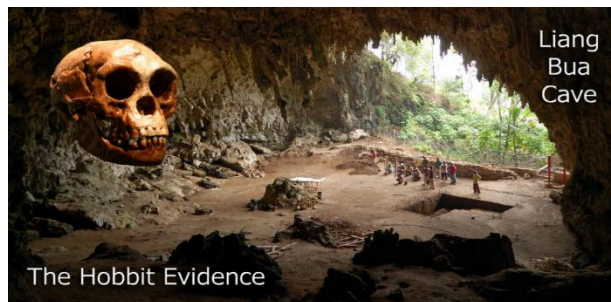
- They say they found 400 specimens like Lucy, but really, all they have is enough **bones to fill a little bucket**.
- Lucy was found **spread over three meters** on a hillside in **hundreds of pieces**.
- **20 tons of sediment** were sifted to find **20%** of her bones.
- Artists have rendered Lucy as having **human-like hands human-like feet and white eyes**, yet none of this was evident in the fossils.
- Female chimps are the **same height and weight** as Lucy.
- They didn't find Lucy's skull, only skull fragments. Lucy discovers said that Lucy's skull was almost entirely missing.
- There's a bone at the bottom of Lucy's skull, and they say it's not supposed to be there; it's a typical baboon bone.
- Lucy's **spine is typical** of the ape, it **enters** the skull at an **angle**, so they have to **walk hunched** down.
- Lucy's **hands were very ape-like**.
- They **didn't find any feet of Lucy**, yet they put feet on the **displays** of Lucy, notably **human feet**.
- They found a **human-like footprint** and human bones a **thousand miles away** from the Lucy find and claimed that the print was of 'Lucy's species.' Nevermind that the footprint looked like an adult male size 10 human foot, not like something that would belong to 3.5 foot Lucy.
- A recent study suggests that Lucy died falling from **40 feet high up in a tree**. What was she doing up there if she could walk?
- See *Dr. Oxman: Order of Man*.

More Lucy Research (not from Genesis Impact):

- Lucy was found over a 2-mile radius. Much of Lucy was found in a room-sized area, but the **knee was 1.6 miles away** and 200 ft deeper. They say the **knee shows evidence of upright** walking. They say its probably from a **different hominid**, but they put it on Lucy.
- They put **white eyes** on it like humans.
- A 2015 study found part of the **backbone** actually belongs to an extinct **baboon**.
- The **hip** was badly broken and **reconstructed** in a way to make it appear to walk upright. The plaster cast was **reshaped** to make it **less flat (ape-like)** and more round (human-like) so it would appear to walk upright, since that's what the theory called for.

- They put **feet like a human** all toes pointing forward. The **St Louis zoo put human feet bones on** The Lucy but not one foot or hand bone was found for Lucy.
- The discoverer was 2 weeks away from running out of **grant money** to discover the missing link of evolution.
- They say the **bones** of Lucy are **slightly bigger** than normal which proves it's becoming human but this is not good logic, there are various animals with **certain breeds having larger bones** than others.
- They named it Lucy because they were listening to The Beatles song Lucy in the sky with diamonds which stands for LSD. These bones would deceive the whole world, quite a trip! At least the devil has a sense of humor.

Lucy similarities to human pygmies: 2004 finds in Indonesia:



(Image & analysis from Universal Model Science textbook)

- **Bones found here are similar in size to the famous 1974 Lucy skeleton in Africa that researchers say is 3.2 million years old.**

- These pygmy bones are **not mineralized like Lucy** and researchers claimed **dates of only several thousand** years.
- Pygmy relatives who live just a half mile from the cave have documented **photographic evidence** of their **ancestors who shared physical characteristics with the remains** found in the cave.

Stating that Lucy is some creature between apes and man is pure speculation without evidence! Lucy may be a monkey, or may be a human. But not an ape human hybrid, there's no such thing. The word of God says animals reproduce after their own kind.

Homo Habilis hominid claim



Skull image: KNM ER 1813 (H. habilis): John Hawks, Marina Elliott, Peter Schmid, Steven E. Churchill, Darryl J. de Ruiter, Eric M. Roberts, Hannah Hilbert-Wolf, Heather M. Garvin, Scott A. Williams, Lucas K. Delezene, Elen M. Feuerriegel, Patrick Randolph-Quinney, Tracy L. Kivell, Myra F. Laird, Gaokgatthe Tawane, Jeremy M. DeSilva, Shara E. Bailey, Juliet K. Brophy, Marc R. Meyer, Matthew M. Skinner, Matthew W. Tocheri, Caroline VanSickle, Christopher S. Walker, Timothy L. Campbell, Brian Kuhn, Ashley Kruger, Steven Tucker, Alia Gurtov, Nompumelelo Hlophe, Rick Hunter, Hannah Morris, Becca Peixotto, Maropeng Ramalepa, Dirk van Rooyen, Mathabela Tsikoane, Pedro Boshoff, Paul H.G.M. Dirks, Lee R. Berger, CC BY 4.0
<<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/>>, via Wikimedia Commons

Image: Homo habilis - forensic facial reconstruction, Cicero Moraes, CC BY-SA 4.0 <<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/>>, via Wikimedia Commons



Computer Image: Screenshot Homo habilis, Cicero Moraes, CC BY-SA 4.0
 <<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/>>, via Wikimedia Commons

- Habilis is claimed to come after Lucy in the evolutionary line.
- They've not found the complete creature, they have fewer than 100 pieces of what they think belongs to him. The creature is shown in museums around the world in complete form.
- The creature is shown with white (human-like) eyes.
- Human tools have been found by the creature, but it's unknown if they were **used by the creature or on the creature**.
- Near the site there were many types of tools and many animals in the same dig as a formation known to have been made by nomadic people.
- There were many animals and tools outside the hut and many mounds; clearly, **people** were living there.
- The lead researcher **said the area was a lot like what we see today**.
- The Stone tools were complex.

Neanderthal hominid claim



Image: Neanderthal at AMNH: Ryan Schwark, CC0, via Wikimedia Commons



Image: Homo sapiens neanderthalensis-Jäger (From Wikipedia page on Neanderthals with this caption: “Reconstruction of a Neanderthal man butchering a goat at the [Neanderthal Museum](#)”) Neanderthal-Museum, Mettmann, CC BY-



Image: (Featured on Wikipedia page on Neanderthal with this caption: “Reconstruction of [Oase 2](#) with around 7.3% Neanderthal DNA (from an ancestor 4–6 generations back)”: Homo sapiens sapiens, Oase, Rumänien (Daniela Hitzemann): Daniela Hitzemann (photograph), CC BY-SA 4.0 <<https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/>>, via Wikimedia Commons

- Neanderthals were humans.
- DNA shows they lived and worked with humans.
- They were accepted in the same clan and community as humans.
- They have jewelry artwork weapons etc.
- They dived for shells, made musical instruments, and yet the museums and show them as foolish apes.

(End of Genesis Impact highlights on hominids.)



Who's Related to Who? (Man Completely Separate from Ape) By Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/who-s-related-to-who>

One of our most thought-provoking exhibits at The Flood Museum invites visitors to stand before five skulls displayed side by side: a modern European human, an Australian Aborigine who died in 1960, a Neanderthal, the famous “Lucy” (*Australopithecus afarensis*), and a modern chimpanzee. The title asks a simple question with profound implications: *Who’s related to who?*

WHO'S RELATED TO WHO?

HONEST SKULL COMPARISON

Misrepresentations hide the obvious truth. Evolutionist lineups and reconstructions frequently isolate Lucy from both humans and apes, add human-like posture and expressions, and promote gradual ascent from apes. Direct comparison reveals two distinct groups with no gradual continuum.

FULLY HUMAN VARIATIONS - CREATED IN GOD'S IMAGE (Genesis 1:26/27)



Modern European



Australian Aborigine



Neanderthal

- All fully human descendants of Adam.
- Brain capacity typically 1350-1600+ cc.
- Evidence of complex culture, tool use, art, burials, and care for others.
- Neanderthal and Denisovan DNA in modern genomes (1-4% in non-Africans) reflects ordinary human population mixing and admixture after Babel, just like Native American, European, or Middle Eastern ancestry markers today.
- Post-Flood and post-Babel genetic variation within one created human kind. Looks can deceive - robust features do not equal "primitive" or sub-human.

APES - NO HUMAN ANCESTORS



Chimpanzee



A. Afarensis

Size scale

- Lucy: Extinct ape kind buried in the Flood.
- Curved fingers and toes for tree climbing. Pelvis and other bones often misrepresented in reconstructions.
- Chimpanzee: Clearly an ape designed for its niche.
- Honest side-by-side comparison shows obvious similarity between Lucy and chimpanzees, and clear difference from all humans.

The fossil record, anatomy, genetics, and archaeology affirm biblical creation: Distinct kinds created by God. Humans uniquely made in His image. Rich variation within the human kind after the Fall and the global Flood. No evidence of evolution from apes to humans. Hope and redemption through Jesus Christ, the Last Adam.

Secular museums and textbooks often present a neat evolutionary ladder rising from ape-like creatures to modern humans over millions of years. Yet when these skulls are examined honestly and placed in direct context with one another, without artistic enhancements, selective framing, or decontextualized displays, the story they tell aligns with Scripture, not speculation. Misrepresentations of supposed “human ancestors” like Lucy frequently fail to show them next to both modern humans and apes precisely because the relationship is obvious: Lucy belongs with the apes. Meanwhile, Neanderthals, Australian Aborigines, and other so-called “primitive” human fossils are fully human, every bit as much as you or I. Anatomy, genetics, archaeology, and behavior all point in the same direction.

The Modern European Human Skull: Our Baseline

A typical modern European human skull shows a high, rounded cranium with an average brain capacity of about 1,350 cubic centimeters (ranging 1,200 to 1,500+ cc across populations), a relatively flat forehead, modest brow ridges, a prominent chin, and an orthognathic (flat) facial profile. These features reflect the intelligence, creativity, abstract reasoning, moral capacity, and spiritual awareness God placed in humanity when He created us in His image (Genesis 1:26-27). All living humans today share this basic design, with natural variations arising from genetics, environment, founder effects, and post-Flood diversification after Babel (Genesis 11).



Human

The Australian Aborigine Skull: Looks Can Deceive

The skull of an Australian Aborigine who died in 1960 often displays more robust features, prominent brow ridges, a receding forehead in some individuals, and stronger jaw structure. To eyes trained by evolutionary assumptions, these traits can appear “primitive.”

Yet this individual was fully human in every biblical and scientific sense. He or she possessed complex language, intricate social structures, rich spiritual traditions, artistic expression (including rock art and storytelling), and the full range of human emotions and intellect. Aboriginal Australians developed sophisticated ecological knowledge, astronomical observations, navigation across vast distances, and sustainable land management over generations in one of the world's most challenging environments. Genetic studies confirm they are modern *Homo sapiens*, part of the single human family descended from Adam and Eve and, later, from Noah's family. Comprehensive analyses of mitochondrial DNA and Y-chromosome markers show deep but fully human lineages consistent with post-Babel migrations and long-term isolation, accompanied by genetic drift and localized adaptations, not a separate evolutionary stage.

Looks do not tell the whole story. Evolutionist anthropology in the 19th and early 20th centuries often ranked human populations on an imaginary ladder of progress, placing Aboriginal people near the bottom to justify racist ideologies and colonial policies. Modern genetics and anthropology reject such hierarchies. Cranial robusticity in some ancient and recent Australian populations reflects normal human variation, founder effects, and adaptation in isolated groups. The Bible directly contradicts evolutionary ranking: God "hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth" (Acts 17:26). All humans, regardless of cranial robusticity, skin tone, or geographic origin, bear God's image equally and possess equal dignity and eternal worth.



Australian Aborigine: Human

The Neanderthal Skull: Fully Human, Not a Missing Link

Neanderthal skulls are robust, with heavy brow ridges (supraorbital torus), an occipital bun at the back of the cranium, a large nasal cavity (possibly an adaptation for warming and humidifying cold air), and a somewhat projecting

mid-face. Average brain capacity often exceeded that of modern humans, around 1,450 cc or more in many specimens, with some reaching 1,600+ cc.

For decades, popular depictions showed Neanderthals as stooped, dim-witted brutes barely capable of speech or culture. Better evidence has overturned this caricature. Neanderthals walked fully upright with a striding gait. They buried their dead, sometimes with possible grave goods or flowers (as at Shanidar Cave in Iraq). They used sophisticated Mousterian stone tools, created personal ornaments and possible symbolic art (including pigment use and engraved objects), made string and fiber artifacts, cared for the sick and injured (evidenced by healed fractures in elderly individuals), and possessed the anatomical structures (including a hyoid bone similar to ours and versions of the FOXP2 gene associated with language) for complex speech.

Most telling from a genetic standpoint: modern non-African humans carry approximately 1 to 4 percent Neanderthal DNA from ancient interbreeding events, primarily estimated around 50,000 to 60,000 years ago. Studies of ancient DNA, including landmark work sequencing the Neanderthal genome, confirm that these encounters produced fertile offspring who contributed lasting genetic material to descendant populations. This is no more unusual or evolutionarily significant than finding Native American, German, Middle Eastern, East Asian, or Sub-Saharan African ancestry markers in a modern DNA test. These percentages and labels are analytical constructs scientists apply to clusters of human genetic variation to trace migrations and admixture within the one human family. They are routinely misused to imply deep evolutionary divergence or “archaic” status when they actually demonstrate the rich genetic diversity God built into humanity and the reality of post-Flood and post-Babel mixing among fully human groups.

Adam was the first man, created directly by God. There is no biblical or scientific necessity to insert pre-Adamic or sub-human ancestors.



Neanderthal: Human

“Lucy”: An Ape, Not an Ancestor

The skull attributed to “Lucy” (*Australopithecus afarensis*), reconstructed from partial fragments discovered by Donald Johanson in Ethiopia’s Hadar region in 1974, tells a very different story. Brain capacity was only about 400 to 500 cc, squarely in chimpanzee range (typically 300 to 500 cc), not human. The face is markedly prognathic (projecting), with large teeth, no chin, and a low forehead. The partial skeleton (roughly 40 percent complete but scattered over a distance of more than a kilometer and across different sediment layers) shows curved fingers and toes well-suited for arboreal (tree-climbing) locomotion, not obligate terrestrial bipedalism.

Evolutionists have long promoted Lucy as a human ancestor or “transitional form,” but detailed anatomical study reveals an extinct ape. The late British zoologist Solly Zuckerman, after years of rigorous comparative analysis, concluded: “They are just apes. Not one of its ape-shaped bones was shaped exactly like the corresponding bone in a human body.” Other researchers have noted that *Australopithecus* was “far more ape-like in many of its features than we’d ever dared imagine previously.”

Misrepresentations are common in textbooks and museum displays. Reconstructions frequently add human-like posture, reduced body hair, lighter skin, and thoughtful facial expressions. The pelvis was crushed and fragmented. Later reconstructions (notably by Owen Lovejoy) added plaster and assumptions to produce a more human-like short, bowl-shaped pelvis oriented for upright walking. A knee joint often cited for bipedalism was found hundreds of feet away and kilometers distant in different sediments. One vertebra long included with Lucy specimens has been identified by some as belonging to an extinct baboon (*Theropithecus*). The famous Laetoli footprints, sometimes attributed to *Australopithecus*, show a human-like gait that some anatomists argue fits modern human feet better than ape-like ones.

When Lucy’s skull (and the associated skeletal elements) is placed directly beside a chimpanzee skull, the similarity is striking. When placed beside a modern human skull, the difference is equally glaring. Displays often avoid this direct, honest, side-by-side comparison, showing Lucy in a progressive “family tree” lineup with humans or artistically enhanced, because the relationship to apes is obvious and undermines the “human ancestor” claim. Lucy was an ape kind, created on Day 6 alongside other land animals (Genesis 1:24-25) and later buried rapidly in the catastrophic sediments of the global Flood. She is not our relative and provides no evidence for human evolution.



Australopithecus afarensis: Not human

The Chimpanzee Skull: Clearly an Ape

A modern chimpanzee skull has a brain capacity of roughly 400 cc, massive brow ridges, a sloping muzzle, large canines, and no chin, unmistakably designed for an arboreal, frugivorous lifestyle with powerful jaw muscles. While chimpanzees display remarkable problem-solving and social intelligence within their created kind, they lack the capacity for abstract reasoning, moral accountability, complex symbolic language, cumulative culture, or worship. Genetic comparisons often cite 98 to 99 percent similarity, but this figure is misleading. It masks major differences in gene regulation, chromosome structure (including the fusion that created human chromosome 2), endogenous retrovirus patterns, and information content that produce vast phenotypic gaps. Chimpanzees were made by God but were never intended to become human.



Chimpanzee: Not Human

The Obvious Truth When Skulls Are Compared Honestly

Side-by-side, the five skulls reveal two clear groups with no gradual continuum:

- **Fully human variations:** Modern European, Australian Aborigine (1960), and Neanderthal. Differences reflect genetic diversity within the human kind, environmental adaptations (including possible post-Flood Ice Age conditions for Neanderthals), founder effects, and minor degenerative changes since the Fall. All share the same fundamental design, the same blood, and the same Creator. Archaeological and genetic evidence shows these populations engaged in complex behavior, tool use, art, burial, care for others, and interbreeding, hallmarks of full humanity.
- **Apes:** Lucy and the chimpanzee. Their anatomical relationship is obvious and close when honestly compared. Neither has any demonstrated anatomical, genetic, or behavioral pathway into humanity. The fossil record as a whole shows humans appearing suddenly as fully formed *Homo sapiens* (or close variants) without a clear, gradual series of ape-to-human transitions. Candidates repeatedly promoted as “missing links” consistently fail under direct scrutiny.

Evolutionary storytelling requires decontextualized displays, heavy artistic imagination in reconstructions, manipulated historical images (such as Haeckel’s fraudulent embryo drawings that still influence some educational materials), and the suppression of contradictory evidence. It requires faith in deep time and unguided processes that neither Scripture nor observable science supports. God’s Word states plainly that man was created fully formed in God’s image on Day 6, that death and suffering entered the world through Adam’s sin (Romans 5:12), and that all humanity descends from that first couple and later from Noah’s family after the global Flood.

The skulls at our exhibit do not show a chain of ancestors climbing toward humanity. They show the handiwork of a Creator who made distinct kinds, endowed humanity with unique dignity and capacities, and allowed rich variation and rapid adaptation within those kinds after the Fall, the Flood, and the dispersion at Babel. They also remind us of our shared need for redemption. The same God who formed Adam from the dust sent His Son, the last Adam, to rescue fallen image-bearers from every tribe and tongue, including all the populations represented in these skulls and their descendants.

See the skulls for yourself. Look closely. Ask the honest question: *Who’s really related to who?* The evidence from anatomy, genetics, archaeology, and behavior, when freed from anti-God presuppositions, points back to the opening chapters of Genesis and forward to the living hope we have in Jesus Christ.

(For further study, see our related articles on the Lucy fossil, adaptation within created kinds, and human origins from a biblical creation perspective, along with resources from other Christian creation science organizations.)

Highlighting Henry Morris Scientific Creationism

Ch. 7 Apes or Man

When they find skeletons with slightly different-sized skulls or teeth, they are quick to claim them as hominids. Different teeth just mean different diets or habitats. Further, rickets, arthritis, poor diets, and other medical conditions can make skeletons look different. There is significant variation in people and monkeys; some are big, some small, etc., and this in no way is evidence of an intermediate species between animals and humans.



They're finding full human skeletons in locations dated before the supposed hominids.

If all people came from a common ancestor they would have had the same language, so why would they split up so much as to cause different races? The language barrier is the main thing that keeps different races from intermarrying.

Language is an unbridgeable gulf between man and animals, our ability to communicate abstract thought.

The oldest language we know is already modern, sophisticated, and complete.

Some animals have instinctive language, but it's not language that involves learning new things and passing them on to the next generation. When animals learn how to do new things, it is not transmitted to their progeny; only man has this ability, as growing civilizations attest.

Yes there are people who have lived in caves and yes, they have used stone tools, but this is not a sign of evolutionary development. There are still people doing that today, there always have been.



When the oldest cultures of an area seem to be the stone age type, this is because when people first migrated there, they were using the tools they already had, and it wasn't until they found ore bodies that they could begin mining, smelting, and resuming all their industry. Particularly after the flood you have people migrating to new areas.

Morris goes over many accurate predictions of the creation model which are supported by archeology geology biology etc. but that are not supported by evolution.

The expected dates of the earliest civilization should be around 4000 BC, the only claim for older civilizations are based on radiocarbon dates.

Dendrochronology (tree ring dating) is unreliable because frequently two or more growth periods occur in the same year.

Note: Even the oldest trees in dendrochronology aren't very old, around 10,000 years, which particularly works with the 1000-year day model, a possibility suggested by several scriptures. End note.

Recently a human skull bone was found in Africa in a soil layer that was supposed to be over 2 billion years old. (Not even evolutionists allow humans to be that old.)

It is an objective fact that humans are moral religious beings and animals are not.

Evolution has its own system of ethics values and ultimate meanings which makes it a religion, which makes teaching of it in public schools indoctrination. The American Humanist Association officially recognizes Evolution as a religion.

Note: If religions are going to be taught in schools, and they could be, they should be recognized, not hidden. Let's teach evolution as one of many religious belief systems, and while we're at it, lets teach other religions too. And let's point out not just the possibilities of evolution, but the many holes in that theory too! Of course, our society is past all that, having adopted evolution as its official state religion, never to be questioned. By making this official accepted scientific position, they have destroyed what science was always meant to be: a simple report of the facts nature presents us with. End note.

All of the supposed evidence for human evolution can fit inside a single coffin. He goes over the various hominid claims which were proven false.

Note: since the time of his book they've come up with more claims, but even recent estimates are that all the supposed hominid bones found could fit in the back of a truck. When they say they have found numerous specimens of hominids, what they mean is they have found numerous bone fragments. End note.

Note: They'll always come up with something or other to uphold their theory, which is another indication we aren't dealing with objective observation, but with dogmatic faith-based support of a beloved doctrine. End note.

PART 6: ADAM: THE DIRECT CREATION OF IMMORTAL MAN IN THE BEGINNING IN GOD’S IMAGE AS GOD’S DIRECT LINEAL OFFSPRING

The Complete 1909 First Presidency Statement: The Origin of Man, “The Church’s Doctrinal Position on These Matters”, as Reprinted in the 2002 Ensign Church Magazine

The following is published on the church website at [The Origin of Man
https://www.churchofjesuschrist.org/study/ensign/2002/02/the-origin-of-man?lang=eng](https://www.churchofjesuschrist.org/study/ensign/2002/02/the-origin-of-man?lang=eng)

The full text of this article is included here for analytical purposes. I wish to draw attention particularly to the first several paragraphs, and the last several paragraphs.

Here it is:

The Origin of Man

February 2002

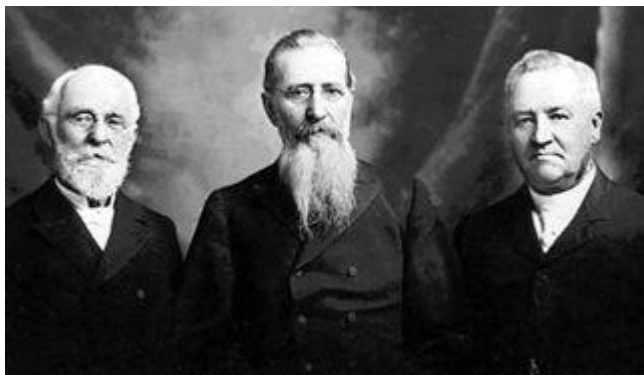
Gospel Classics:

The Origin of Man

By the First Presidency of the Church

From *Improvement Era*, Nov. 1909, 75–81; capitalization, punctuation, paragraphing, and spelling standardized.

“God created man in his own image” ([Gen. 1:27](#)).



[The following paragraph is from the 2002 re-printing, an introduction to the 1909 statement:] *In the early 1900s, questions concerning the Creation of the earth and the theories of evolution became the subject of much public discussion. In the midst of these controversies, the First Presidency issued the following in 1909, which **expresses the Church’s doctrinal position on these matters**. A reprinting of this important First Presidency statement will be helpful as members of the Church study the Old Testament this year.*

[Here begins the 1909 statement:]

“Inquiries arise from time to time respecting the attitude of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints upon questions which, though not vital from a doctrinal standpoint, are **closely connected with the fundamental principles of salvation**. The latest inquiry of this kind that has reached us is in relation to the origin of man. It is believed that **a statement of the position held by the Church** upon this subject will be timely and productive of good.

In presenting the statement that follows we are **not conscious of putting forth anything essentially new**; neither is it our desire so to do. Truth is what we wish to present, and truth—eternal truth—is fundamentally old. **A restatement of the original attitude of the Church** relative to this matter is all that will be attempted here. To tell **the truth as God has revealed it**, and commend it to the acceptance of those who **need to conform their opinions thereto**, is the sole purpose of this presentation.

“God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.” In these plain and pointed words the inspired author of the book of Genesis made known to the world the truth concerning the origin of the human family. Moses, the prophet-historian—“learned,” as we are told, “in all the wisdom of the Egyptians”—when making this important announcement was not voicing a mere opinion, a theory derived from his researches into the occult lore of that ancient people. He was speaking as the mouthpiece of God, and his solemn declaration was for all time and for all people. No subsequent

revelator of the truth has contradicted the great leader and lawgiver of Israel. All who have since spoken by divine authority upon this theme have confirmed his simple and sublime proclamation. Nor could it be otherwise. Truth has but one source, and all revelations from heaven are harmonious with each other. The omnipotent Creator, the maker of heaven and earth, had shown unto Moses everything pertaining to this planet, including the facts relating to man's origin, and the authoritative pronouncement of that mighty prophet and seer to the house of Israel, and through Israel to the whole world, is couched in the simple clause: "God created man in his own image" (Gen. 1:27; see Moses 1:27–41).

The creation was twofold—first spiritual, secondly temporal. This truth, also, Moses plainly taught—much more plainly than it has come down to us in the imperfect translations of the Bible that are now in use. Therein the fact of a spiritual creation, antedating the temporal creation, is strongly implied, but the proof of it is not so clear and conclusive as in other records held by the Latter-day Saints to be of equal authority with the Jewish scriptures. The partial obscurity of the latter upon the point in question is owing, no doubt, to the loss of those "plain and precious" parts of sacred writ, which, as the Book of Mormon informs us, have been taken away from the Bible during its passage down the centuries (see 1 Ne. 13:24–29). Some of these missing parts the Prophet Joseph Smith undertook to restore when he revised those scriptures by the spirit of revelation, the result being that more complete account of the Creation which is found in the book of Moses, previously cited. Note the following passages:

"And now, behold, I say unto you, that these are the generations of the heaven and of the earth, when they were created, in the day that I, the Lord God, made the heaven and the earth,

"And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew. For I, the Lord God, created all things of which I have spoken, spiritually, before they were naturally upon the face of the earth. For I, the Lord God, had not caused it to rain upon the face of the earth. And I, the Lord God, had created all the children of men; and not yet a man to till the ground; for in heaven created I them, and there was not yet flesh upon the earth, neither in the water, neither in the air;

"But, I, the Lord God, spake, and there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground.

"And I, the Lord God, formed man from the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul, the first flesh upon the earth, the first man also; nevertheless, all things were before created; but spiritually were they created and made according to my word" (Moses 3:4–7; see also Moses 1 and Moses 2, and compare with Gen. 1 and Gen. 2).

These two points being established, namely, the creation of man in the image of God, and the twofold character of the Creation, let us now inquire: What was the form of man, in the spirit and in the body, as originally created? In a general way the answer is given in the words chosen as the text of this treatise. “God created man in his own image.” It is more explicitly rendered in the Book of Mormon thus: “All men were created in the beginning after mine own image” ([Ether 3:15](#)). ... If, therefore, we can ascertain the form of the “Father of spirits,” “The God of the spirits of all flesh,” we shall be able to discover the form of the original man.

Jesus Christ, the Son of God, is “the express image” of His Father’s person ([Heb. 1:3](#)). He walked the earth as a human being, as a perfect man, and said, in answer to a question put to Him: “He that hath seen me hath seen the Father” ([John 14:9](#)). This alone ought to solve the problem to the satisfaction of every thoughtful, reverent mind. The conclusion is irresistible, that if the Son of God be the express image (that is, likeness) of His Father’s person, then His Father is in the form of a man; for that was the form of the Son of God, not only during His mortal life, but before His mortal birth, and after His Resurrection. It was in this form that the Father and the Son, as two personages, appeared to Joseph Smith, when, as a boy of 14 years, he received his first vision. Then if God made man—the first man—in His own image and likeness, He must have made him like unto Christ, and consequently like unto men of Christ’s time and of the present day. That man was made in the image of Christ is positively stated in the book of Moses: “And I, God, said unto mine Only Begotten, which was with me from the beginning, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and it was so. ...

“And I, God, created man in mine own image, in the image of mine Only Begotten created I him; male and female created I them” ([Moses 2:26–27](#)).

The Father of Jesus is our Father also. Jesus Himself taught this truth when He instructed His disciples how to pray: “Our Father which art in heaven,” etc. Jesus, however, is the firstborn among all the sons of God—the first begotten in the spirit, and the only begotten in the flesh. He is our elder brother, and we, like Him, are in the image of God. All men and women are in the similitude of the universal Father and Mother and are literally the sons and daughters of Deity.

“God created man in His own image.” This is just as true of the spirit as it is of the body, which is only the clothing of the spirit, its complement—the two together constituting the soul. The spirit of man is in the form of man, and the spirits of all creatures are in the likeness of their bodies. This was plainly taught by the Prophet Joseph Smith (see [D&C 77:2](#)).

Here is further evidence of the fact. More than 700 years before Moses was shown the things pertaining to this earth, another great prophet, known to us as the brother of Jared, was similarly favored by the Lord. He was even permitted to behold the spirit-body of the foreordained Savior, prior to His incarnation; and so

like the body of a man was gazing upon a being of flesh and blood. He first saw the finger and then the entire body of the Lord—all in the spirit. The Book of Mormon says of this wonderful manifestation:

“And it came to pass that when the brother of Jared had said these words, behold, the Lord stretched forth his hand and touched the stones one by one with his finger. And the veil was taken from off the eyes of the brother of Jared, and he saw the finger of the Lord; and it was as the finger of a man, like unto flesh and blood; and the brother of Jared fell down before the Lord, for he was struck with fear.

“And the Lord saw that the brother of Jared had fallen to the earth; and the Lord said to him: Arise, why hast thou fallen?

“And he saith unto the Lord: I saw the finger of the Lord, and I feared lest he should smite me; for I knew not that the Lord had flesh and blood.

“And the Lord said unto him: Because of thy faith thou hast seen that I shall take upon me flesh and blood; and never has man come before me with such exceeding faith as thou hast; for were it not so ye could not have seen my finger. Sawest thou more than this?

“And he answered: Nay; Lord, show thyself unto me.

“And the Lord said unto him: Believest thou the words which I shall speak?

“And he answered, Yea, Lord, I know that thou speakest the truth, for thou art a God of truth, and canst not lie.

“And when he had said these words, behold, the Lord showed himself unto him, and said: Because thou knowest these things ye are redeemed from the fall; therefore ye are brought back into my presence; therefore I show myself unto you.

“Behold, I am he who was prepared from the foundation of the world to redeem my people. Behold, I am Jesus Christ. I am the Father and the Son. In me shall all mankind have life, and that eternally, even they who shall believe on my name; and they shall become my sons and my daughters.

“And never have I showed myself unto man whom I have created, for never has man believed in me as thou hast. Seest thou that ye are created after mine own image? Yea, even all men were created in the beginning after mine own image.

“Behold, this body, which ye now behold, is the body of my spirit; and man have I created after the body of my spirit; and even as I appear unto thee to be in the spirit will I appear unto my people in the flesh” ([Ether 3:6–16](#)).

What more is needed to convince us that man, both in spirit and in body, is the image and likeness of God and that God Himself is in the form of a man?

When the divine Being whose spirit-body the brother of Jared beheld took upon Him flesh and blood, He appeared as a man, having “body, parts and passions,” like other men, though vastly superior to all others, because He was God, even the Son of God, the Word made flesh: in Him “dwelt the fulness of the Godhead bodily.” And why should He not appear as a man? That was the form of His spirit, and it must needs have an appropriate covering, a suitable tabernacle. He came into the world as He had promised to come (see [3 Ne. 1:13](#)), taking an infant tabernacle and developing it gradually to the fulness of His spirit stature. He came as man had been coming for ages and as man has continued to come ever since. Jesus, however, as shown, was the Only Begotten of God in the flesh.

Adam, our first progenitor, “the first man,” was, like Christ, a preexistent spirit, and like Christ he took upon him an appropriate body, the body of a man, and so became a “living soul.” The doctrine of the preexistence—revealed so plainly, particularly in latter days—pours a wonderful flood of light upon the otherwise mysterious problem of man’s origin. It shows that man, as a spirit, was begotten and born of heavenly parents and reared to maturity in the eternal mansions of the Father, prior to coming upon the earth in a temporal body to undergo an experience in mortality. It teaches that all men existed in the spirit before any man existed in the flesh and that all who have inhabited the earth since Adam have taken bodies and become souls in like manner.

It is held by some that Adam was not the first man upon this earth and that the original human being was a development from lower orders of the animal creation. These, however, are the theories of men. The word of the Lord declared that Adam was “the first man of all men” ([Moses 1:34](#)), and we are therefore in **duty bound to regard him as the primal parent of our race.** It was shown to the brother of Jared that all men were created in the *beginning* after the image of God; whether we take this to mean the spirit or the body, or both, it commits us to the same conclusion: **Man began life as a human being, in the likeness of our Heavenly Father.**

True it is that the body of man enters upon its career as a tiny germ embryo, which becomes an infant, quickened at a certain stage by the spirit whose tabernacle it is, and the child, after being born, develops into a man. **There is nothing in this, however, to indicate that the original man, the first of our race, began life as anything less than a man, or less than the human germ or embryo that becomes a man.**

Man, by searching, cannot find out God. **Never, unaided, will he discover the truth about the beginning of human life.** The Lord must reveal Himself or remain unrevealed; and the same is true of the facts relating to the origin of

Adam's race—God alone can reveal them. Some of these facts, however, are already known, and what has been **made known it is our duty to receive and retain.**

The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, basing its belief on divine revelation, ancient and modern, **proclaims man to be the direct and lineal offspring of Deity.** God Himself is an exalted man, perfected, enthroned, and supreme. By His almighty power He organized the earth and all that it contains, from spirit and element, which exist coeternally with Himself. He formed every plant that grows and every animal that breathes, **each after its own kind, spiritually and temporally**—"that which is spiritual being in the likeness of that which is temporal, and that which is temporal in the likeness of that which is spiritual." **He made the tadpole and the ape, the lion and the elephant,** but He did not make them in His own image, nor endow them with godlike reason and intelligence. Nevertheless, the whole animal creation will be perfected and perpetuated in the Hereafter, each class in its "distinct order or sphere," and will enjoy "eternal felicity." That fact has been made plain in this dispensation (see D&C 77:3).

Man is the child of God, formed in the divine image and endowed with divine attributes, and **even as the infant son of an earthly father and mother is capable in due time of becoming a man,** so the undeveloped offspring of celestial parentage is capable, by experience through ages and aeons, of **evolving into a God."**

Joseph F. Smith

John R. Winder

Anthon H. Lund

First Presidency of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints

November 1909

Adam: First Man

Avowed atheist **William Craig** said that what evolution has done is **destroy the idea of a first man.**

Craig's statement is a clear recognition of the implication and intention of the theory of evolution. Let the saints beware: if you eliminate Adam and his fall, there is no need for Christ and his redemption. If there is no first Adam, there is no second Adam (Christ) (1 Cor. 15:22, 45).

Joseph Fielding Smith recognized that the teaching of Adam as the first man was lost as a **part of the great apostasy**. In a Church priesthood manual, he said, "The doctrine that man is created in the image of God was also lost in the apostasy. The vision given to **Joseph Smith** restored the true doctrine in relation to this question. It is just as strange that man, in his spiritual darkness, would change this glorious doctrine and in the later times substitute for it **the abominable doctrine** that **man has ascended through countless ages from lower forms of life**, as it is that they could make of the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost a God to be worshipped that is without substance, immaterial and therefore non-existent." (Church History and Modern Revelation, Course Study for the Melchizedek Priesthood Quorums for the Year 1947 p.11)

Evolutionists attempt to circumvent the notion of Adam being the first man by assigning novel meanings to the terms "first" and "man." This is clearly wresting (trying to change the plain meaning of) scripture.

Moses 1:34 is clear that Adam was the first man:

"And the first man **of all men** have I called Adam, which is many."

D&C 84:16 also shows that Adam was the first man: "And from Enoch to Abel, who was slain by the conspiracy of his brother, who received the priesthood by the commandments of God, by the hand of his father Adam, who was **the first man**—"

Remember that Eve is "**the mother of all living**" (**Gen. 3:20**), not just those who came after Adam.



(Get your “No Monkeys in My Family Tree t-shirt!) <https://a.co/d/dNh8FqA>
(Another fun variation of a shirt like this could be
“Apes Belong in Trees, Not Genealogies!”)



Joseph Fielding Smith taught that the revelation on Adam as the “First Flesh” indicates that there were no mortal creatures or death before him. He said, “Then what is meant by the “first flesh”? It is simple when you understand it. Adam was the first of all creatures to fall and become flesh, and flesh in this sense means mortality, and all through our scriptures the Lord speaks of this life as flesh, while we are here in the flesh, so Adam became the first flesh. **There was no other mortal creature before him, and there was no mortal death until he brought it . . .**” (Joseph Fielding Smith, Seek Ye Earnestly [Salt Lake City: Deseret Book Co., 1970], 281.)

President Harold B. Lee was asked about pre-Adamic people. “I was somewhat sorrowed recently to hear someone, a sister who comes from a church family, ask, “What about the pre-Adamic people?” Here was someone who I thought was fully grounded in the faith. I asked, “What about the **pre-Adamic people**?” She replied, “Well, aren’t there evidences that people preceded the Adamic period of the earth?” I said, “Have you forgotten the scripture that says, ‘And I, the Lord God, formed man from the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul, the **first flesh upon the earth, the first man also....**’ ” (**Moses 3:7**) I asked, “Do you believe that?” She wondered about the creation because she had read the theories of the scientists, and the question that she was really asking was: **How do you reconcile science with religion?** The answer must be, **If science is not true, you cannot reconcile truth with error.**” (Harold B. Lee, “First Presidency Message: Find the Answers in the Scriptures,” Ensign, Dec. 1972, 2.)

Marion G. Romney summarized the doctrines against pre-Adamites as follows: “For many years I had an assignment from the First Presidency to serve on what

was known as the Church Publications Committee. We were expected to read and pass upon material submitted for use in the study courses of our auxiliary organizations. In reading these materials my spirit was sometimes offended by the use of language which expressed the views of those who did not believe in the mission of Adam. I have reference to words and phrases such as **“primitive man,” “prehistoric man,” “before men learned to write,”** and the like. Sometimes these terms are used in ways which evidence a misunderstanding of the mission of Adam. The connotation of these terms, as used by unbelievers, is **out of harmony with our understanding** of the mission of Adam, as taught by such teachers as Enoch, Moses, and Nephi. Adam fell that men might be” (2 Ne. 2:25). There were **no pre-Adamic men in the line of Adam**. The Lord said that Adam was the first man (see Moses 1:34, Moses 3:7; D&C 84:16). The Lord also said that Adam was the first flesh (see Moses 3:7), which, as I understand it, means the first mortal on the earth. I understand from a statement made by Enoch, in the book of Moses, that there was **no death in the world before Adam** (see Moses 6:48; 2 Ne. 2:22). Enoch also said that a record of Adam was kept in a book which had been written under the tutelage of the Almighty himself...I am not a scientist. I do not profess to know much about what they know. My emphasis is on Jesus Christ, and him crucified, and the revealed principles of his gospel. **If, however, there are some things in the strata of the earth indicating there were men before Adam, then they were not the ancestors of Adam.** And we should avoid using language and ideas that would cause confusion on this matter. (President Marion G Romney, <https://www.lds.org/ensign/1980/09/records-of-great-worth?lang=eng>)



Of course, I don't believe there are strata indicating creatures before Adam, that would contradict an entire line of prophetic teachings on there being no death upon the whole face of the earth before the fall.

As for the morality of this first man, Adam, refer to the section of this book on

evolution's impact on testimony, **Alma 41**, and so on.

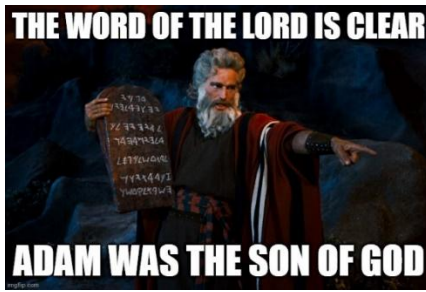
The long lifespan of the ancient patriarchs, reaching into their 900s, is another contentious subject for evolutionists, who believe we are evolving, not regressing.

Elder **Joseph Fielding Smith** addressed claims in the Church about pre-Adamic people in 1930. He said, **“Even in the Church there are a scattered few who are now advocating and contending that this earth was peopled with a race—perhaps many races—long before the days of Adam. These men desire, of course, to square the teachings in the Bible with the teachings of modern science and philosophy in regard to the age of the earth and life on it. If you hear any one talking this way, you may answer them by saying that the doctrine of "pre-Adamites" is not a doctrine of the Church, and is not advocated nor countenanced by the Church. There is no warrant in the scriptures, not an authentic word, to sustain it.”** (p.147 October 1930 issue of The Utah Genealogical and Historical Magazine. https://www.dialoguejournal.com/wp-content/uploads/sbi/articles/Dialogue_V15N01_81.pdf)



Adam: Literal Progeny of God (Not Hominid)

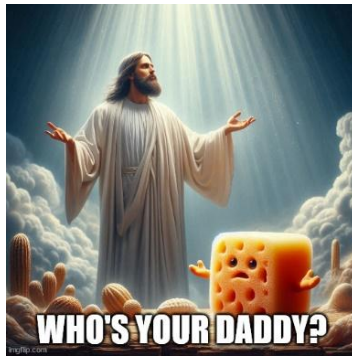
According to **Darwin**, “It is only...arrogance which made our forefathers declare that they were descended from...gods.” (The Descent of Man, pp. 31-32) Make no mistake, these worldviews are diametrically opposed.



Genesis 1:27 shows that we look like God, just another evidence that God is the real Father of the human race (not monkeys): “So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.”

Acts 17:29 shows that we are OFFSPRING of God, and specifically makes the point that this is how we know God isn’t a strange thing, but is an actual person like us: “Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man’s device.”

So who’s your daddy? The sponge, or the God? Did you originate from on high, or from beneath?



When the 1st Presidency statements refer to “our race,” they clearly mean the human race. They clearly show that the origins of all humans are not from lower life forms, yet that is exactly what the theory of evolution is founded upon! You can’t have a common ancestor between humans, animals, and plant life if the human race is the “first man of all men!” There are no semi-humans who lived before Adam. The actual gap between man and all other known species is colossal, and conjecture based on supposed transitional fossils doesn’t change that.

Evolutionists play word games and claim that the humanoids before Adam weren't human, thereby insisting that those could have still been Adam's parents. But think about it: Who was Adam's dad? Was Adam's father an 'almost human,' or was it God Himself, as scripture and modern prophets have boldly declared? Remember the plain and precious teaching of the bible in **Luke 3:38**, **"Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God."** So, is a hominid the God of the Christian evolutionists? Because whoever sired Adam is God. Certainly, a lower lifeform hominid is not the God of the bible or the restoration.

When Christians play word games and claim that the first man can be Adam while allowing for Adam's parents to be monkey-men, I'm reminded of Alma's plea, **"O blessed God, have mercy on this people!"** (**Alma 19:29**) Why have we rejected God's words, His precious truths, in exchange for the teachings of the Gentiles?

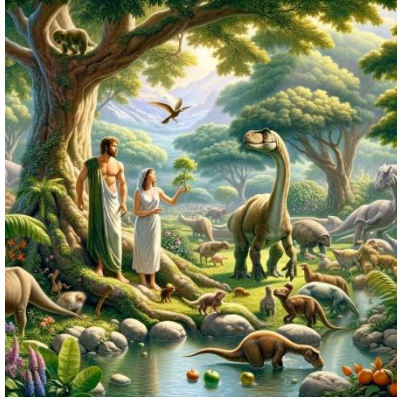
Consider these prophetic teachings on Adam's biological dad being God:

Brigham Young: "Mankind are here because they are offspring of parents (Adam and Eve) who were first **brought here from another planet**, and power was given them to propagate their species, and they (were) commanded to multiply and replenish the earth...(God) **created man as we create our children; for there is no other process of creation in heaven, on the earth, in the earth, or under the earth, or in all the eternities, that is, that (was), or that ever will be... We are flesh of (God's) flesh, (and) bone of his bone**" (Journal of Discourses 11:122; 9:283, October 1859).



As you can see, President Young taught that Adam was sired by God, and at some point brought to this earth. He teaches that the making of Adam from the dust is

an allegory to protect the sacred truth many weren't ready to receive. Others such as Joseph Fielding Smith believed that Adam was sired by God the Father and Mother on this very sphere. A minority of saints still maintain that Adam was created from the dust directly by God, but all of these scenarios are very different from millions of years of slow evolutionary growth from monster into man.



Many are surprised to learn that God is a family man, that the Earth is patterned after heaven. This is a core message of the restoration. The great mystery is unraveled. God is an exalted man (**Moses 6:57: “Man of Holiness is his name”** and **D&C 130:1: “he is a man like ourselves. 2 And that same sociality which exists among us here will exist among us there”** and **D&C 130:3: “the idea that the Father and the Son dwell in a man’s heart is an old sectarian notion, and is false.”** And **D&C 130:22: “The Father has a body of flesh and bones as tangible as man’s”** and **Joseph Smith: “God Himself was once as we are now, and is an exalted man, and sits enthroned in yonder heavens! That is the great secret. If the veil were rent today, and ... if you were to see Him today, you would see Him like a man in form—like yourselves in all the person, image, and very form as a man.”** *Teachings of Presidents of the Church: Joseph Smith* (2007), 40).

This exalted man lives on a planet somewhere in time and space.

He still experiences time, it’s just different time (**Abraham 3:4: “This is the reckoning of the Lord’s time, according to the reckoning of Kolob.”**) He still lives in space. (**Abe. 3:9: “one planet above another, until thou come nigh unto Kolob, which Kolob is after the reckoning of the Lord’s time; which Kolob is set nigh unto the throne of God,”**) (See also **D&C 130:7: “they reside in the presence of God, on a globe...”**)

He has a body. (**D&C 130:22**: “The Father has a body of flesh and bones as tangible as man’s; the Son also;”)

He has a wife. (**D&C 131:1-2**: “1 In the celestial glory there are three heavens or degrees; 2 And in order to obtain the highest, a man must enter into this order of the priesthood [meaning the new and everlasting covenant of marriage];”)

He has children. (this point should be obvious, but here is one reference: **D&C 130:2**: “that **same sociality** which exists among us here will **exist among us there**.” See also **1 Cor. 11:11**, & **Gen. 1:28** on the righteousness of procreation.)

Amen! No wonder the restored Church of Jesus Christ is so focused on family life! Our opportunity to build families in this life is a key part of the test of life, to demonstrate whether we will be worthy of continuing to do so, like God Himself, in the world to come. It has been taught that in the restored Church that the only people God rules over are his children. (see for example, **1 Nephi 17:36**: “Behold, the Lord hath created the earth that it should be inhabited; and he hath created his children that they should possess it.”)

Next here is **Joseph F. Smith** preaching that Adam was born of woman into this world: “...Man was born of woman; Christ the Savior was born of woman; and God the Father was born of woman. Adam, our earthly parent, was also born of woman into this world, the same as Jesus and you and I...” (Pres. Joseph F. Smith, *Deseret News*, Section 3, p. 7, 27 December 1913).

Faithful Joseph Smith scholar **Hyrum Andrus** taught that “**Joseph Smith** is reported...to have taught that **God was the great head of human procreation** – was really and truly the **Father of both our spirits and our (physical) bodies**” (Hyrum Andrus, ‘God, Man, and the Universe,’ pp. 351-354).

As it says in the line of the **First Presidency statement**, which the authors didn’t include in their quotation in the book, man is “**the direct and lineal offspring of Deity**.” Lineal? Ponder the meaning of that word. That is genealogical language. It means the same way that your dad is your direct dad, God is Adam’s direct dad. Can we be any clearer? If Luke 3:38, which outlines the genealogy leading up to Adam, is not spiritual, why should we claim that the step where it says Adam’s father is God is suddenly spiritual? The context of the list being physical parentage insists that Adam’s physical father is God.

The Latter-Day Saints are endowed with the understanding that God has a tangible body (**D&C 130:22**), He is married to a woman (**D&C 130:2**; etc.), that procreation is divine when used properly (**1 Cor. 11:11, Gen. 1:28**), and that “children are an heritage from the Lord” (Psalm 127:3-5). Can you put the pieces of this puzzle together? The Latter-Day Saints, armed with these truths, are in a better position to refute evolution as the origin of man than any other Christian denomination. Yet somehow, most Christians now are far ahead of the Latter-day Saints in the fight against evolution. Have we traded pure doctrine for worldly approval and university accreditation? The saints once led the fight against evolution with more power and simple logic than any other faith could offer, but not anymore. Now it’s just watered-down unexplainable statements that somehow God is our Father, and evolution, sure, why not!

The Let’s Talk Science book, which advocates for the acceptance of evolution in the Church, represents a larger movement within the Church to undermine our foundational understanding of restored truth and replace it with a more politically correct version of faith. Let us instead turn to God in a mighty revival and bravely stand again to reject these philosophies of men.



So, how did life get to Earth in the first place? Revelation teaches us that God brought animals to this world. You might think of it in a similar way to how Noah brought animals to the new land after the flood. In the beginning, God planted seeds and placed animals on the Earth. We learn this in the temple. We learn it in Genesis. We learn it everywhere. We learn in genetics that one species cannot create another. Simple truths are in great contrast to the complexities of evolution. Many Protestant religions have adopted some of these truths. How did man arrive? He was either brought here or procreated here.

Joseph Fielding Smith emphasized the scriptural doctrine of life being transplanted to this Earth from elsewhere. He said, **“Why not the shorter route and transplant them from another earth as we are taught in the scriptures? Surely to any reasonable mind, the Lord would not have to start with an amoeba,**

pass through the stage of lower fish to higher fish to reptiles to apes and to man!” (Joseph Fielding Smith, *Man: His Origin & Destiny*, Ch. 12 Man the Offspring of God)

Elder Russel M. Nelson found 55 verses attesting man’s divine creation. He said, “We are children of God, created by him and formed in his image. Recently I studied the scriptures simply to find how many times they testify of the divine creation of man. Looking up references that referred either to *create* or *form* (or their derivatives) with either *man*, *men*, *male*, or *female* in the same verse, I found that there are at least fifty-five verses of scripture that attest to our divine creation (**Genesis 1:27; 2:7, 8**; 5:1, 2; 6:7; Deuteronomy 4:32; Isaiah 45:12; Malachi 2:10; Mark 10:6; Romans 9:20; Ephesians 3:9; Colossians 3:10; 2 Nephi 1:10; 2:15; 9:6; 29:7; Jacob 4:9; Mosiah 4:2, 9; 7:27; Alma 1:4; 18:32, 34, 36; 22:12, 13; Mormon 9:12, 17; **Ether 1:3; 3:15, 16**; Moroni 10:3; **D&C 20:18; 29:30, 34; 77:2; 77:12; 93:29; Moses 1:8; 2:27; 3:5, 7, 8, 9; 6:8, 9; 7:32; 8:26; Abraham 4:26, 27; 5:7, 8, 14, 16**).” (*The Magnificence of Man*, March 29 1987, BYU Devotional, <https://speeches.byu.edu/talks/russell-m-nelson/magnificence-man/>)



The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil: Symbol, Shadow, and Stone (On Both Literal and Symbolic Meanings to Eden & The Fall, Doctrinal & Scientific) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-tree-of-knowledge-of-good-and-evil-symbol-shadow-and-stone>

Updated: 8.3.26

This interpretation is an application of concepts first introduced in Token of the Bow, and expanded in What Happened to Hope? in the chapter Symbols,

Shadows, and Stone. Using the principles first expressed there, this analysis applies these concepts to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil God placed in the Garden of Eden. It is a work in progress. Dr, Robert L. Wright

The account of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in Genesis 2–3 stands as one of the most pivotal and multilayered narratives in scripture. Far from requiring us to force it into a single category of pure symbol, mere literary shadow, or rigid historical fact, the story exemplifies the principle articulated in my chapter *Symbols, Shadows and Stone*. Scripture, and life itself, can embody all three simultaneously. Each dimension enriches the others without diminishing their power. The references to the tree unfold within a historical narrative that is stone: a discrete, factual event involving an actual tree and actual fruit. Yet it pulses with symbolic depth, including its name as a classic merism, and prophetic or shadow significance. It prefigures Christ’s Atonement, the introduction of opposition and mortality into the cosmos, and the eschatological restoration of paradise. This essay offers a thorough exegetical analysis. It draws on biblical, Christian, Latter-day Saint (LDS), early Israelite, Near Eastern, and even cross-linguistic evidence. It addresses the experiential reality of the Fall, the deeper issue of moral autonomy, refutes overly sexualized interpretations, explores its cosmic implications including entropy, and traces parallels with Gethsemane, the cross, and end-times events. The inclusion of thorns in the curse and the crown of thorns at the crucifixion further reinforces these connections between the Tree, the Fall, and Christ’s redemptive work on the tree of the cross. Ultimately, the Tree invites us not only to understand ancient scripture but to apply its truths personally.

The Broader Concept of Merism and Its Application to the Tree

A merism is a literary device common in Biblical Hebrew. It expresses a totality or completeness by naming two contrasting extremes or poles, implying everything in between. Classic examples include “heavens and earth” in Genesis 1:1 for the entire universe, “evening and morning” in Genesis 1:5 for a full day, or “high and low” in English for a comprehensive search. In Genesis 2:9 and 2:17, the phrase “tree of the knowledge of good and evil” (Hebrew: *‘ēṣ hadda ‘at ṭōb wārā’*) employs “good and evil” (*ṭōb wārā’*) as a merism. Literally “good and bad or evil,” it does not primarily denote moral dualism or sexual awareness. Instead it signifies comprehensive knowledge: everything from the best to the worst, omniscience-like discernment, or the full spectrum of experiential reality. The serpent promises in Genesis 3:5 that eating will make them “like God, knowing good and evil,” echoing divine totality (cf. 2 Samuel 14:17; Deuteronomy 1:39). Hebrew *da’at* here functions as “knowing” (infinitive or gerund) or experiential knowledge, not mere factual data (*yāda’*). The tree

therefore represents the acquisition of godlike wisdom through opposition: tasting mortality to appreciate life, suffering to value joy, and evil to choose good.

This merism does not reduce the tree to pure allegory. It operates within a concrete narrative framework. This allows the event to be simultaneously factual (stone), typological (shadow), and richly symbolic.

Yet the phrase carries still deeper force when read as an ancient Hebrew idiom. Beyond the merism of total knowledge, “knowledge of good and evil” functions as an expression of moral authority: the right and capacity to determine for oneself what is right and what is wrong. Biblical scholars, both Christian and Jewish, have long noted this. Bruce Waltke observes that the tree “belongs exclusively to God. Sin consists of an illicit reach of unbelief, an assertion of human autonomy to know morality apart from God. The creature must live by faith in God’s word, not by a professed self-sufficiency of knowledge.” Tremper Longman similarly states that by eating, Adam and Eve “assert their own moral independence from God. In essence, through their act, they say to God, ‘We will not allow you to define what is right and what is wrong, but we will make our own ethical judgments.’” John Walton adds that the wisdom represented by the tree is not itself the source of wisdom; God is. Adam and Eve were to gain wisdom from Him, perhaps even through the tree in due time, but only as and when they were ready. The medieval Jewish commentator Nachmanides (Ramban) points in the same direction: the fruit gives birth to the will and desire to choose a thing or its opposite, for the good or the bad. *Da ‘at* here carries the sense of will or intention. The consistent thread is moral self-determination, the claim of the creature to occupy the divine prerogative of defining good and evil.

Thus the merism of comprehensive knowledge and the idiom of moral autonomy converge. The tree offered not merely information about good and evil, but the experiential assertion of the right to define them independently of the Creator. That assertion is the heart of the transgression.

The Historical Narrative as “Stone”: An Actual Tree, Actual Fruit, Discrete Event

Symbols, Shadows and Stone argues that many dismiss early Genesis as legend. Yet archaeological stone such as the Tel Dan Stela or NHM altars grounds even symbolic elements in history. The Genesis account presents the Tree of Knowledge likewise: not myth or mere parable, but embedded in a factual primeval history. God plants “every tree” (Genesis 2:9), including this specific one “in the midst of the garden,” alongside the Tree of Life. The command is literal: “of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat” (Genesis 2:17; cf. Moses 3:16–17). Eve “took of its fruit and ate” (Genesis 3:6), then

shared it. These were discrete actions with immediate, physical consequences (eyes opened, fig leaves, expulsion).

Prophetic teachings affirm this historicity while embracing multiplicity. The fruit was literal food causing bodily change from paradisiacal immortality to mortality. Lehi in 2 Nephi 2:15 explicitly sets “the forbidden fruit in opposition to the tree of life; the one being sweet and the other bitter,” underscoring tangible opposition. The Fall was a transgression (not a sin in the fullest sense), a deliberate choice enabling progression. This aligns with the document’s stone: actual people (Adam, Eve) in a real setting, whose choices have enduring historical and covenantal weight.

The event was discrete: one forbidden act at one moment, introducing irreversible change. This singularity mirrors the Atonement’s discrete efficacy, one sacrifice for all.

Experiential Nature of Partaking, Moral Autonomy, and Issues with Sexual Transgression Theories

Partaking was profoundly experiential, not abstract or intellectual. The fruit was “good for food,” “a delight to the eyes,” and “to be desired to make one wise” (Genesis 3:6), sensory and volitional. Eating produced immediate knowledge through experience: “the eyes of both were opened, and they knew that they were naked” (Genesis 3:7). Shame, mortality awareness, and toil entered their reality. In LDS terms (2 Nephi 2:23–25; Moses 5:11), it enabled seed, joy, and redemption: opposition experienced, not theorized. Eve’s solitary act underscores agency and the personal, embodied cost of choice.

The deeper issue, however, is not the acquisition of information but the assertion of moral autonomy. The serpent’s promise, “ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil,” is not merely a promise of expanded data. It is an invitation to seize the divine role of moral arbiter. Solomon later asked the Lord for “an understanding mind to govern your people, that I may discern between good and evil” (1 Kings 3:9). Solomon sought that discernment *from God*, as a dependent servant. Adam and Eve reached for it *apart from God*, as autonomous agents. The difference is decisive. One path is faith; the other is the root of rebellion.

This experiential core also exposes flaws in sexual interpretations of the Fall. Eve partakes alone first (“she took of its fruit and ate”), then gives to Adam “who was with her” (Genesis 3:6). The transgression precedes any spousal interaction, and God had already commanded “be fruitful and multiply” (Genesis 1:28) before the Fall. Post-Fall shame over nakedness arises after eating, as consequence, not cause. Early Christian and Jewish sources focus on disobedience rather than sex

as the primal sin. Sexual interpretations often import Canaanite fertility motifs anachronistically, ignoring the narrative sequence and the merism's broader scope of moral authority. The Fall enables full human sexuality within covenant, but the tree itself enacts the claim to moral self-determination, together with the mortality and opposition that follow.

The Pattern of Autonomy Across Scripture

The sin inaugurated at the tree did not end in Eden. It set the pattern for all subsequent human rebellion. In Genesis 4, Cain decides for himself what constitutes acceptable worship, rejects God's correction, and murders his brother. In Genesis 11, humanity unites at Babel "to make a name for ourselves," constructing a tower of self-glory rather than submitting to the Lord's command to fill the earth. In the period of the judges, "everyone did what was right in his own eyes" (Judges 21:25), the Hebrew equivalent of determining good and evil independently. The kings of Israel, anointed to administer God's justice, repeatedly redefined it according to their own desires, exploiting the people and worshiping idols of their own making. The prophets cry out against the same pattern: "Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness" (Isaiah 5:20). Jeremiah diagnoses the result: "The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately sick; who can understand it?" (Jeremiah 17:9). Humanity's internal moral compass is broken precisely because we seized God's place as moral authority.

This consistent biblical thread confirms that the Tree of Knowledge is not an isolated episode about fruit or curiosity. It is the origin point of the creature's claim to define reality on its own terms. The rest of scripture is the long working-out of that claim, and of God's redemptive answer to it.

Entropy, the Curse, Thorns, and Cosmic Change

The Fall as a discrete event introduced entropy: decay, death, and disorder into the universe. This aligns with the Curse (Genesis 3:17–19): cursed ground, "thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee," sweat, and return to dust. The introduction of thorns is no incidental detail. It directly stems from the transgression tied to the Tree of Knowledge. Pre-Fall, the ground yielded effortless abundance. Post-Fall, it resisted with painful, entropic growth. Thorns symbolize the new reality of opposition, toil, and mortality. We can link this to the second law of thermodynamics. The universe's tendency toward disorder was not inherent in the pristine creation but allowed to exist by the Fall. This explains physical death, disease, and natural evil. This is not mere symbolism but a factual shift in cosmic conditions. It enables opposition (2 Nephi 2:11) while necessitating redemption.

The Tree's fruit was the gateway to original sin's transmission (Romans 5:12). The event was necessary for agency, family, and exaltation, yet still required Christ's intervention. The claim to moral autonomy produced real consequences that only the second Adam could reverse. The thorns of the curse become a profound link to the Atonement. At Christ's crucifixion, soldiers wove a crown of thorns and placed it on his head (Matthew 27:29; Mark 15:17; John 19:2, 5). The second Adam, hanging on a tree (the cross; see Acts 5:30; Galatians 3:13; Deuteronomy 21:23), literally bore upon his brow the very thorns that the first Adam's act had introduced into the world. This crown was not random mockery but a typological fulfillment. Christ, who knew no sin, wore the emblem of the Fall's curse to redeem it. The tree that brought knowledge through the assertion of autonomy produced thorns. The tree (cross) of obedience bore the King crowned with those thorns, reversing the curse and bearing its full weight. In this way, the historical reality of the Tree of Knowledge and its immediate consequences (thorns) find their prophetic shadow in the crucifixion. Stone, symbol, and shadow converge in the Savior's suffering.

Possible Scientific Basis for the Fall and the Introduction of Entropy

Some thinkers have explored possible scientific correlates to the theological reality of the Fall introducing entropy, decay, and death into the created order. The Second Law of Thermodynamics describes the universal tendency toward increasing disorder, or entropy, in isolated systems. While the fundamental laws of physics, including thermodynamics, appear to have been operative from the initial creation (evidenced by processes such as solar energy transfer and digestion), many interpreters suggest that pre-Fall conditions were supernaturally sustained in a state of remarkable order and immortality. The discrete act of partaking of the forbidden fruit may have triggered a profound physical and biological shift.

In this view, the fruit itself could have contained properties or initiated biochemical processes that fundamentally altered human physiology and, by extension, the broader creation. Possible mechanisms include the introduction of oxidative stress, free radical damage, or the activation of genetic programs for aging and cellular senescence. Such changes would align with the experiential knowledge gained: mortality and the full spectrum of opposition became embodied realities.

The transition from a paradisiacal, immortal state to mortality involved a real physical transformation. The partaking of the actual fruit enacted this change, removing the divine sustaining influence that had previously counteracted or minimized entropic effects. This is not to say the Second Law itself originated at

the Fall, but that its full, unchecked consequences for living organisms and the ground (thorns, toil, death) were unleashed. The curse pronounced upon the ground and the introduction of thorns serve as tangible markers of this new entropic reality. Ultimately, these scientific reflections remain interpretive models. They illustrate how the historical stone of the Fall could produce measurable physical consequences while retaining its rich symbolic and typological power.

Theological Interpretation: The Removal of the Light of Christ and God's Presence

My personal belief is that the introduction of entropy at the Fall did not require any alteration to the fundamental structure or laws of the universe. Instead, it resulted from the withdrawal of the Light of Christ and the direct sustaining presence of God. Scripture records that light was created on the first day (Genesis 1:3–5), long before the sun, moon, or stars. This is the Light of Christ, which “proceedeth forth from the presence of God to fill the immensity of space” and “is the light which is in all things, which giveth life to all things” (Doctrine and Covenants 88:6–13; see also John 1:4–9; Doctrine and Covenants 93:2). This divine light or power upholds, animates, and orders all creation (Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:3). In the paradisiacal state of Eden, God's personal presence provided an extraordinary environment of order, immortality, and abundance. The garden itself was a localized extension of divine presence, where death, decay, and entropy were held at bay (Genesis 2:8–15; Moses 3:8–9).

The discrete transgression involving the Tree of Knowledge changed this dynamic. When Adam and Eve partook of the fruit, they became subject to the conditions of mortality. God then withdrew His immediate presence, as evidenced by the expulsion from the garden and the placement of cherubim to guard the way to the Tree of Life (Genesis 3:8, 23–24; Moses 4:28–31). With the sustaining influence of God's presence and the associated Light of Christ no longer operating in the same direct and localized manner within Eden, the natural tendencies toward disorder, previously restrained or counteracted, were fully unleashed. Entropy, decay, and death entered human experience and the broader creation not as newly invented physical realities but as the inevitable result of the removal of that divine restraining and ordering force. The thorns and thistles of the curse (Genesis 3:18) thus serve as visible signs of a cosmos now operating in the reduced light of a fallen world, relying on the partial light provided by the sun. This model preserves the historicity of the Fall as stone while harmonizing it with observable scientific realities. It also deepens the typological shadow: Christ, who is the Light of the World, later enters the fallen world to restore what was lost through His Atonement, ultimately culminating in the eschatological return of

God's full presence, the removal of dependence on the sun: "And night will be no more. They will need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and they will reign forever and ever" (Revelation 22:5), accompanied by the removal of every curse.

Relevance of Analyzing Eden with Gethsemane, the Cross, and Eschatological Events

Scripture invites typological reading. Eden parallels Gethsemane and the cross as shadow and fulfillment. In Eden's garden, the first Adam asserts moral autonomy amid trees. He grasps godlikeness through forbidden fruit and introduces death and thorns. In Gethsemane's garden, the second Adam (Christ) submits perfectly: "not my will, but thine, be done" (Luke 22:42). He sweats blood (symbolic of life poured out) and reverses the choice of autonomy. Where the first Adam said, in effect, "My will be done," the second Adam said the opposite. The cross, itself a tree, becomes the antitype. Christ bears the curse Adam incurred, including the thorns now fashioned into a crown of derision and pain. Where Eden's tree brought the knowledge of good and evil through the assertion of independence, Golgotha's tree brings redemption through perfect obedience and dependence. This is a tale of two gardens, two trees, and the thorns that bind them: one of claimed autonomy leading to expulsion and cursed ground, one of surrendered will leading to reconciliation. The crown of thorns visibly unites the consequences of the Fall to the head of the Redeemer. The crown reinforces the tree motif at every level. The forbidden tree's fruit led to thorns in the soil. The cross (tree) of atonement is crowned with those same thorns, declaring victory over the very entropy, opposition, and moral self-determination the original tree unleashed.

Eschatologically, Revelation 22 restores paradise. The Tree of Life returns in the New Jerusalem (no longer barred). It bears monthly fruit for the healing of nations, with "no more curse" (Revelation 22:2–3). The Tree of Knowledge is absent because redemption is complete. Moral agency, tested through opposition (including thorns), yields to eternal life without further probation. The merism's totality and the claim of autonomy find resolution in Christ, who "knows" good and evil perfectly yet triumphs by perfect submission, and who wore the thorns so that we need not.

Early Israelite Discussions, Near Eastern References, and Linguistic Connections

Early Israelite tradition (Talmud, Midrash) speculates concretely on the tree's nature while preserving historicity. The Talmud (Sanhedrin 70a; Berakhot) debates the fruit: grape, fig, or wheat. Midrashim portray the serpent as *yetzer ha-*

ra or external tempter, emphasizing moral growth. These affirm the event's reality while extracting symbolic lessons, with no wholesale allegorization. The thorns of Genesis 3:18 receive similar attention in later rabbinic sources as emblematic of post-Fall struggle. This further underscores the curse's tangible reality.

Near Eastern parallels (Adapa myth, Gilgamesh Epic) provide context but highlight Genesis's polemic. Genesis rejects sexual fall or cyclical myth. It affirms linear history, human responsibility, and one God's sovereignty. Linguistically, Hebrew *ṭōb wārā* 'as merism has Egyptian and Homeric parallels. Ancient Chinese pictographs encode Genesis motifs with striking specificity. The character for "garden" (園) incorporates components evoking an enclosure containing two persons (or a man formed from dust receiving breath), directly recalling the creation of Adam and Eve and their placement in Eden. The character for "covet" or "desire" (婪 *lán*) is composed of two trees (林) combined with a woman (女), vividly depicting Eve's temptation as she faces one of the two special trees in the garden. The character for "forbidden" or "prohibit" (禁 *jìn*) consists of two trees (林) alongside a divine command or proclamation (示), precisely mirroring God's explicit prohibition against eating from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Additional characters evoke temptation or the tempter as elements suggesting a garden or trees combined with a secretive or devilish figure. These ideographic compositions, preserved in the earliest oracle bone and bronze inscriptions, offer independent linguistic stone corroboration. They suggest that post-Babel dispersion carried primeval memories of the Genesis account into ancient Chinese culture, embedding the historical reality of the Fall, the two trees, the woman, and the divine prohibition into the very structure of their written language.

Full Exegetical Analysis and Application

Exegetically, Genesis 2:9 plants the trees amid provision. Genesis 2:15–17 commissions humanity as stewards with agency and one prohibition (death as consequence, spiritual and physical). Chapter 3 presents the serpent's craft, Eve's rationalization, Adam's complicity, divine interrogation, curses (including thorns), and expulsion (cherubim guarding Tree of Life). These form a tight narrative arc of disobedience, the assertion of moral autonomy, knowledge, mortality, and hope (protoevangelium in 3:15). The merism, the idiom of moral authority, the sensory details, the etiology of pain, toil, thorns, death, and the typological threads integrate symbol, history, and prophecy seamlessly. The crown of thorns in the Gospels completes the exegetical arc. The curse pronounced because of the Tree is visibly assumed by Christ on the cross-tree.

Application, per *Symbols, Shadows and Stone*, transforms this. Surround yourself with personal symbols (temple motifs, reminders of covenants) evoking the garden's paradise and the crown that redeems its thorns. Become shadows of Christ through service amid opposition. Wear the thorns of mortality with faith. Glimpse stone: bedrock realities of the Fall's necessity, including the disastrous claim to define good and evil on our own terms, and the Atonement's power in personal trials. Daily we face the same choice presented at the tree: will we lean on our own understanding and redefine good and evil according to our preferences, or will we trust the Lord's definition and receive wisdom from His hand? Proverbs 3:5–7 and Psalm 1 reverse the Fall by calling us back to relational dependence. Solomon asked for discernment from God rather than seizing it. Christ submitted rather than asserted. We, like our first parents, choose daily between life and the knowledge that comes through opposition. We progress toward the restored Tree of Life, free from curse and crowned with glory, only as we abandon the claim of moral autonomy and abide in the One who alone defines good and evil perfectly.

In embracing all three lenses (stone, symbol, and shadow) we avoid the uncertainty plaguing critical thinkers and discover scripture's incredible richness. The Tree of Knowledge was real. Its fruit was tasted. Its consequences (including thorns and the unbroken pattern of human self-determination) were cosmic. Yet its story points unerringly to Christ, who wore the crown of thorns on the tree of the cross and who turns the Fall's bitter fruit into eternal joy by restoring us to dependence on the Father's will.

References

Longman, Tremper, III. Relevant discussion of moral independence in the Genesis narrative (as cited in secondary synthesis; see also Longman, *How to Read Genesis*, 2nd ed., InterVarsity Press).

Nachmanides (Ramban / Moses ben Nahman). *Commentary on the Torah: Genesis*. Translated and annotated by Charles B. Chavel. New York: Shilo Publishing House, 1971–1976. Especially comments on Genesis 2:9 regarding *da'at* as will or intention and the awakening of the capacity to choose between a thing and its opposite.

Walton, John H. *Genesis*. The NIV Application Commentary. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2001 (and related statements). On the tree representing wisdom whose true source is God, to be gained relationally and in due time.

Waltke, Bruce K., with Cathi J. Fredricks. *Genesis: A Commentary*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2001. Especially the observation that “the tree is good, but it

belongs exclusively to God. Sin consists of an illicit reach of unbelief, an assertion of human autonomy to know morality apart from God.”

Early Jewish Sources

Babylonian Talmud. Tractates Sanhedrin 70a and Berakhot (discussions of the possible identity of the fruit).

Midrashic literature (various) on the serpent, moral growth, and the tangible nature of the curse, including thorns.

Ancient Near Eastern and Archaeological Context

The Adapa myth and the Epic of Gilgamesh (comparative literature highlighting Genesis’s distinct linear, monotheistic, and responsibility-focused narrative).

Tel Dan Stele (archaeological attestation of the “House of David”).

NHM / Nihm tribal inscription (epigraphic evidence often linked to biblical place-name studies).

Linguistic and Cross-Cultural Evidence

Ancient Chinese ideographs (oracle bone and bronze inscriptions). Characters such as 園 (garden), 婪 (covet/desire), and 禁 (forbidden/prohibit) as analyzed in studies correlating early Chinese writing with Genesis motifs (e.g., traditional creationist linguistic observations of post-Babel memory preservation).

Two Adams in Genesis by Edwin Goble (Synchronizing Teachings from the Restoration & Ancient Religions on The Natural Fatherhood of God in Eden & The First Man as a Direct Descendant of God)

Richardson's introductory note:

This essay helps to clarify doctrines about Adam, suggesting that Adam is a title used by both God, and the man who fell in Eden. It shows that Adam and Eve were made by their parents naturally, that God is not just our spiritual father, but is also our physical father. Luke 3:38, Moses , and other scriptures support this claim. The Father Adam referred to by Brigham Young and others was in fact God the Father, and the Adam who is Michael who fell in Eden is a separate person. Hebrew word analysis, comparative mythology, and teachings of various church leaders are used to support this claim.

These teachings of the literal natural fatherhood of God are in alignment with the 1909 First Presidency Statement "The Origin of Man" which stated:

"Inquiries arise from time to time respecting the attitude of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints upon questions which, though not vital from a doctrinal standpoint, are **closely connected with the fundamental principles of salvation**. The latest inquiry of this kind that has reached us is in relation to the origin of man. It is believed that **a statement of the position held by the Church** upon this subject will be timely and productive of good.

"In presenting the statement that follows we are **not conscious of putting forth anything essentially new**; neither is it our desire so to do. Truth is what we wish to present, and truth—eternal truth—is fundamentally old. **A restatement of the original attitude of the Church** relative to this matter is all that will be attempted here. To tell **the truth as God has revealed it**, and commend it to the acceptance of those who **need to conform their opinions thereto**, is the sole purpose of this presentation. ...

..."It is held by some that Adam was not the first man upon this earth and that the original human being was a development from lower orders of the animal creation. These, however, are the theories of men. The word of the Lord declared that Adam was "the first man of all men" (Moses 1:34), and we are therefore in **duty bound to regard him as the primal parent of our race**. It was shown to the brother of

Jared that all men were created in the *beginning* after the image of God; whether we take this to mean the spirit or the body, or both, it commits us to the same conclusion: **Man began life as a human being, in the likeness of our Heavenly Father.**

“True it is that the body of man enters upon its career as a tiny germ embryo, which becomes an infant, quickened at a certain stage by the spirit whose tabernacle it is, and the child, after being born, develops into a man. **There is nothing in this, however, to indicate that the original man, the first of our race, began life as anything less than a man, or less than the human germ or embryo that becomes a man.**

“Man, by searching, cannot find out God. **Never, unaided, will he discover the truth about the beginning of human life.** The Lord must reveal Himself or remain unrevealed; and the same is true of the facts relating to the origin of Adam’s race—God alone can reveal them. Some of these facts, however, are already known, and what has been **made known it is our duty to receive and retain.**

“**The Church** of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, basing its belief on divine revelation, ancient and modern, **proclaims man to be the direct and lineal offspring of Deity.** God Himself is an exalted man, perfected, enthroned, and supreme. By His almighty power He organized the earth and all that it contains, from spirit and element, which exist coeternally with Himself. He formed every plant that grows and every animal that breathes, **each after its own kind, spiritually and temporally**—“that which is spiritual being in the likeness of that which is temporal, and that which is temporal in the likeness of that which is spiritual.” **He made the tadpole and the ape, the lion and the elephant,** but He did not make them in His own image, nor endow them with godlike reason and intelligence. Nevertheless, the whole animal creation will be perfected and perpetuated in the Hereafter, each class in its “distinct order or sphere,” and will enjoy “eternal felicity.” That fact has been made plain in this dispensation (see D&C 77:3).

“Man is the child of God, formed in the divine image and endowed with divine attributes, and **even as the infant son of an earthly father and mother is capable in due time of becoming a man,** so the undeveloped offspring of celestial parentage is capable, by experience through ages and aeons, of **evolving into a God.**

[End of 1909 The Origin of Man First Presidency Statement quotation.]

We will see further in this essay how indeed, mankind is the “[direct and lineal offspring of Deity](#)” (1909 Origin of Man). Get ready to ponder anew what the Almighty can do!

Much further treatment of the subject of Adam as a title and God being the literal father of Adam is available, but the following essay by my friend Edwin Goble serves to demonstrate a consistent understanding of scripture. It should be noted that a similar essays defending this perspective have been written by Elden Watson (perhaps the first to discover the ‘two Adams’ perspective in recent times), Alma Allred, and recently Jonah Barnes on Ward Radio has suggested the same concepts, and shows that altered punctuation in transcripts of Brigham’s speeches can provide different meanings etc. This article by Edwin Goble represents a significant amount of monumental new rigorous research on the subject, bringing it toward a much higher level of understanding and plausibility. I’m also working on a book expounding on the whole subject including surrounding doctrines and many quotations, contact me for further details or if you have insights to share on the topic.

Others such as Dr. Robert Wright hold that the creation of Adam from dust and Eve from the rib are to be understood on a non-symbolic level, and that perspective is also valid, and may turn out to be the correct position on every level. There are strong points to that perspective in addition to scriptural authority, such as the physical capacity of the rib to repair itself and the discovery of cloning technology.

While we see a few possible interpretations of the creation of Adam, what should certainly be rejected by all saints are the ideas that Adam is merely a myth, an idea is promoted by mainstream academia. The scriptures clearly teach chronologically and otherwise that about 6000 years ago, Adam and Eve were made, and that all human beings are descendants from them. We need not compromise with Babylon’s scholars about the origin of man.

Now let us enjoy brother Goble’s writings which bring refreshing insights into the reality of Adam and Eve, and our shared identity with them as children of God, in the truest and most powerful sense:

Abstract:

This paper is written from the believing Latter-day Saint perspective. The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (historically nicknamed “Mormon”) is the religion that was established by Joseph Smith the Prophet. In the year 2018, the leader of the largest Latter-day Saint denomination, Russell M. Nelson, directed members to cease using the nickname, and refer to the Church by its legal name.

LDS Corporal God

The Latter-day Saint religion is unique in its belief that not only does Jesus have a body, but also the Father, being a separate individual in LDS belief, has a body. It is obvious where Jesus got his body, because he was born to Mary. Christian belief in general holds that Jesus’ conception was a miraculous event brought on by the third member of what LDS call the “Godhead,” and what other Christians generally call the Trinity. But in other Christian religions, the Trinity constitutes a mystery of three persons in one God, united in an unknown fashion. And somehow, a being that is a Spirit (without a body), had a Son, but this is a mystery not to be explained, just accepted. On the other hand, in the LDS religion, the three beings of the Godhead or Trinity form a council or quorum, and are united in purpose and will. So, for the LDS, it is natural that God the Father, having a body like any other human being, would have a Son with a body. But most LDS still hold that the conception of Jesus was brought about by the power of the Holy Ghost.

It isn’t all that well established how God the Father got his body in LDS theology, but some like Church President Lorenzo Snow, and the Prophet Joseph Smith, explained the idea that God the Father had lived in the same sort of state that we live in at some point of His existence. The common couplet coined by Lorenzo Snow is that “[As man is, God once was. As God is, man may become.](#)” Lorenzo Snow claimed it as revelation from God. Other Church Presidents such as Gordon B. Hinckley have sort of stepped back from that in recent years, and said that it is something not well understood, instead of saying that it is a well-established and authoritatively binding revelation from God. Whatever the case, it is well accepted among the LDS that God has not always been what he is now, and that he went through some sort of process to get this body. He didn’t always have it.

Creation of Adam & Eve Symbolic of Natural Creation

Among other religions, the creation of Adam and Eve are mysterious as well, because somehow God created them from the dust and from a rib. Church Presidents of the LDS such as Brigham Young taught instead that this was poetic and symbolic in Genesis, instead of being literal. Instead, a belief has existed that Adam and Eve were created as any other humans were created. If so, then they were born of a woman like any human.

Mother Goddess

Many may not be aware, but the LDS theology also has a Mother Goddess, who is the wife of the Father God. While many pagan religions of antiquity had mother goddesses and they worshipped them, the LDS do not worship the Mother Goddess, and believe that it is only proper to worship the Father God. So the existence of a Goddess doesn't mean that she is to be worshipped.

Many Fathers, but 1 to us

Similarly, if the Father God went through a state similar or identical to what humans on this planet go through to gain a body, this necessitates that he must have had a God himself before he became God. While some LDS acknowledge that this creates an infinite regress of Gods (what some call the “turtles-all-the-way-down problem”), this is just an assumption made by some LDS. Nevertheless, in what is known as the King Follet Discourse, Joseph Smith the Prophet taught that God the Father had a Father who was his God. How that works, the LDS simply do not really know. All they know is that it is only proper to worship our Father God, and that the mere existence of other Gods doesn't mean that they ought to be worshipped.

God Goes to Eden to Make Adam Naturally: LDS Teachings & Supported by Genesis

Anyhow, the Prophet Brigham Young, the successor to Joseph Smith, taught that the Father God and Mother Goddess spent time living in the Garden of Eden and had children after the natural manner, the same as all other humans. However there are controversies about Brigham Young's theology that I won't get into at this point.

Suffice it to say that Apostle Bruce R. McConkie taught and made clear that the identities of these Gods that spent time in Eden were the Father God and Mother Goddess that the LDS usually speak of. Elder McConkie taught that two children were born to these gods in Eden, and they actually spent time raising them as a family there, before the Gods left Eden.

This is the concept that I will explore in this paper. But this paper seeks to establish that this very concept is also hidden in the Hebrew of Genesis, and was deliberately obscured by the author of Genesis. In other words, the proposal is that when translated a certain way, Genesis actually can be shown to teach this concept which was taught by Brigham Young and Bruce R. McConkie. And so, instead of speaking of only one Adam or first man in Genesis that lived in the Garden, it is actually speaking of two. And careful exegesis of the Biblical text will bear this out.

[End of abstract.]

Adam Creation is Historical & Mythical, Deliberately Obscure

In the accounts of the creation of Adam's and Eve's bodies given in scriptures, they are related in the *form* of myths. Just because it is given in a *mythic literary form*, that has no implication for its historicity. It is still very historical. It's just that the details of the story have to be researched thoroughly to figure them out with precision. Language that was deliberately obscure was employed.

As Brigham Young stated: “Your mother did not tell the truth when she told you that little Billy came from a hollow toad stool. I would **not accuse your mother of lying, any more than I would Moses.**”¹

Ancient Goddess Rib Creation

There are two different ways humans are created in Genesis, both being mythological and poetic. One is creation from dust and the other is creation from a rib.² It is interesting to note that the Heavenly Mother figure in Babylonian religion had an epithet of “**Lady of the Rib.**” But why was it a Goddess that had this epithet in myth, and **not just a human**? While we will not immediately answer that question (and the question is indeed a very important and timely one for this discussion), this fact does demonstrate that mythological motifs from the story do indeed go back to a time before Moses and Abraham.

As Abraham says, he preserved the records of the ancients in his hands.³ And remnants of stories from those records persisted in the ancient Near East, even though many of those records are no longer extant. A study of this myth in-depth will elucidate certain details of this story that are significant.

“Adam God” a False Doctrine

In discussing Adam and his creation, there have been some controversies in the past that I wish to address, before I begin, to avoid potential misunderstandings about my position. Suffice it to say that there is a false doctrine that surfaced over the years called the Adam-God theory. It is entirely false. As Spencer W. Kimball says:

We warn you against the dissemination of doctrines which are not according to the scriptures and which are alleged to have been taught by

¹ <http://user.xmission.com/~research/central/resth3a.htm>

² Abraham 5:7, 15-16

³ Abraham 1:28

some of the General Authorities of past generations. Such, for instance, is the Adam-God theory. We denounce that theory and hope that everyone will be cautioned against this and other kinds of false doctrine.⁴

Michael the Archangel is NOT the Father of our Spirits. Elohim is the Father of our Spirits, and Michael, or Adam, is one of his spirit children. The view of the author is in harmony with the position of the Church about the identities of Michael the Archangel and Elohim.

Name Titles

Now that that issue is out of the way so there is no misunderstanding, the author wishes to review a very important concept. This key concept is called name-titles which is a key concept in this chapter. Name-titles are where names not only sometime represent a name of a person, but can be a symbol of attributes held by that person.

For example, some claim that there are 144 different names of Jesus Christ in the Bible, and each one highlights some kind of role that Jesus plays in the Plan of Salvation or some sort of attribute of his character or something of that nature. Similarly, our Heavenly Father, Elohim, has many names and titles, that each highlight a role that he plays in the Plan as well. The identity of each person is the same regardless of what name they are called by. Another common one in the restorationist religion that is encountered a lot is the name-title of Elias. Elias is a person as well as an office. So this can be a title of the office. But the origin of the name Elias is in the Greek language, and it is derived from the Hebrew name Elijah. And it is true that while the prophet Elijah is not Elias, Elijah has some Elias attributes. It is said that Elijah would come before the great and dreadful day of the Lord, which he did to restore the keys. But this was an instance of an Elias manifestation, because he was to come beforehand in order to help prepare the way for something. This same thing, the manifestation of a coming beforehand to prepare the way, in some sense, is an attribute of a number of prophets, including John the Baptist that was also called Elias, because he came to prepare the way of the Lord. In any case, so the reader can see that Elias can and has been both a person and a symbolic name that has become a title of various persons.

⁴ *Church News*, October 9, 1976

It is the position of the author that the names Adam and Eve are also name-titles and refer to various persons, much like the name Elias, not just the persons they are typically applied to. We will discuss more on this a bit later.

But now having established that concept, we focus back on the issue of the creation of Adam and Eve. The issues found in the scriptures that relate the story of their creation is one where we must “**rightly divide the word of truth.**” We seek to understand the true meaning of the creation of Adam from the dust and the creation of Eve from a rib.

The Rib Symbol: Procreative Priesthood Sacrament

Now, let us review what might be called the “mundane translation” of the scriptures in question (I use the word mundane here deliberately):

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.⁵

And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.⁶

The usual figurative interpretations of the rib story usually center on the idea that it is symbolic of the marriage covenant. Jeffrey R. Holland stated that sexual

⁵ Genesis 2:7

⁶ Genesis 2:21-25

intimacy in marriage is a sacrament. It is in some sense an ordinance or ritual.⁷ While this is not the same as an ordinance that saves us like baptism, it is nevertheless a sacred act reserved primarily for the New and Everlasting Covenant of Marriage, which is an order of Priesthood. Marriages for time are certainly legal and binding for mortality, and acts in marriage of either kind are certainly not sinful. But a **marriage for time should not be all** there is. It ought to be crowned with a **sealing** by Priesthood to make it whole and **complete**, in order to fulfill the purpose that it was meant for: **A Priesthood Sacrament**.

But it will become evident that when one engages in the procreative act with one's spouse, one is participating ritually in a myth, **re-enacting** it. Specifically, this is the myth of creation from dust and creation from a rib, acting it out in what may be called **sacred embrace**, or what some have called the *Hieros Gamos*. Sacred embraces are encountered in another ritual as well that some are familiar with in restorationism.

Father Personally Involved in Creation of Man

Bruce R. McConkie wrote that Jehovah and his brethren created all the plant and animal life on the earth. But when man was created, there was “[a change in Creators. That is, the Father himself became personally involved.](#)” And so, there was “[no delegation of authority where the crowning creature of creation was concerned.](#)”⁸

Elohim himself and his Wife were the Agents that created Adam and Eve and left that duty to no one else. This is because they were the ones who had this authority and power, being of this order of Priesthood, to carry out this function and act out this sacrament, which became the first instance of this ritual acting out of this myth on this planet for the human species. So the idea that Jesus Christ was personally involved in the actual creation process of Adam's body is a mistaken one.

⁷ *Of Souls, Symbols, and Sacraments*, p. 152-167

⁸ *The Promised Messiah*, p. 62

Condescension to Create Man

There are two different words in the English language that imply a downward type of motion or movement. One is the word fall, and the other is the word condescension, containing the word descend, meaning to go downward. In order to create bodies for their children, the Father Elohim himself and his Wife **condescended**, coming down from heaven himself to create the bodies of man.

In the English language, the word condescend, especially in modern usage, can have a negative connotation. But in the way it is used in the scriptures when referring to the **condescension of God**, it is an act of Love. The Savior condescended to do something only he could do in the Atonement. The Father and Mother Gods did something only they could do, in an act of love, for the human race, to initiate the process of the creation of physical bodies for their spirit children.

Adam Follows His Father's Pattern

Adam or Michael, the son of Elohim, following that **same pattern** as the condescension of God, ended up falling. And that fall made it possible for the creation of the **other** bodies of men who came afterward. Therefore, the condescension of Elohim and the fall of Adam/Michael each have a pattern in common, though they are not exactly identical. Robert L. Millet writes that the fall of Adam set man on a path that was “downward, yet forward.”⁹ The condescension of God similarly set man on a path that was “downward” from heaven, and “forward” to initiate the process of mortality. So these shared pattern show that Adam's act of the fall in a certain sense was following the same pattern established by his Father. There is a spiritual likeness between the two acts. Both acts led set man on the track of mortal life.

The Creation of Adam and Eve and the Names of Deity

⁹ “The Man Adam,” *Ensign*, Jan. 1994, p. 8

Now, of the creation of Adam, we read:

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.¹⁰

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken . . .¹¹

From the Dust of Adamah: Feminine Earth Goddess

Now, the Hebrew word for “dust” here is *aphar*, meaning dust, clay, earth or mud. The word for **ground** here is *adamah*. So, the scripture can also be rendered this way, when we plug-in Hebrew word adamah:

And the LORD God formed Adam **from the dust of adamah**, and breathed into his nostrils the breath (spirit) of life, and Adam became a living soul.¹²

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the *adamah*; for out of it wast thou taken, for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.¹³

The word **adam** means “**man**,” and is derived from the word *adamah*, meaning ground or earth, both from the Semitic root meaning red, or red earth, which is 'DM. The difference between the words *adam* and **adamah** in Hebrew is that one is male, and the other is **female**. Biblical scholars note that the word *adamah* is feminine. All of these symbols have many multiple layers of meaning.¹⁴

¹⁰ Genesis 2:7

¹¹ Genesis 3:19

¹² Genesis 2:7

¹³ Genesis 3:19

¹⁴ *Echoes of Eden*, p. 21

It is also critical to note that in Akkadian, the word **adamu** means “**to make.**” In the Indo-European languages, human (“man”) and humus (“ground”) from English, and the Latin homo, from which the scientific designation of the species, “homo sapien,” comes, all come from the same **root dheghom**, meaning “**earth.**” It is interesting that in this root, there is also a *D* as well as an *M*.¹⁵ It seems evident that this Indo-European root is related to the Semitic roots. Now we compare these things to a scripture:

Now, concerning the state of the soul between death and the resurrection—Behold, it has been made known unto me by an angel, that the spirits of all men, as **soon as they are departed** from this mortal body, yea, the spirits of all men, whether they be good or evil, are **taken home to that God** who gave them life.¹⁶

Here, the parallel between the earth or ground and God is very clear. The word *adamah* seems more specifically to refer to the **female part of the Elohim, the Mother God**. This makes sense, because it was said that it was “*adamah*” from **whence Adam was taken**. It may mean therefore that one **name** of the Mother Goddess is *Adamah*. In the opinions of one commenter:

The Egyptians and Babylonians believed that **man was conceived in the embrace of heaven and Earth**. In the psychoanalytic interpretation of the Genesis saga, Otto Rank arrived at the reconstruction that Adam was born as the product of sexual intercourse between a father-god and the mother-goddess Eve or Adamah (the earth). The myth-formation we know, the tradition that Adam gives birth to Eve, is a reversal of the **original version that Adam was born from Adamah, the great earth-goddess**.

Adamah or Eve would correspond to the great mother-goddess of the ancient Orient, to the divine mother of the Babylonians called Ishtar, the

¹⁵ See Thomas V. Gamkrelidze, and V. V. Ivanov, *The Early History of Indo-European Languages*,

<http://www.biblemysteries.com/library/indoeuropean.htm>;

<http://www.myetymology.com/proto-indo-european/dheghom-.html>

¹⁶ Alma 40:11

Egyptians Isis, the Phrygians Cybele, the Greeks Aphrodite, and the Romans Venus.¹⁷

Sewing Seed into Ground: A Divine Metaphor of Procreation

Stéphane Beaulieu similarly comments:

There is evidence that Adamah/Adamma was a popular earth-goddess at Ebla. However, she became exclusively worshiped by royalty when her cult was brought to Ugarit, where she may have been closely linked to queen of the gods, Athirat. It is entirely possible that in the Levant, where Asherah appears to have certain attributes of an earth-goddess, Adamah may have been perceived as an aspect of Asherah. Nonetheless, **sowing seeds in the soil is a common sexual metaphor**, and the text implies that Yahweh performed such an act to bring about, not only vegetation, but perhaps even the adorn. Certainly, the **sexual activity of the deities is a dominant motif in the ancient Near Eastern mythologies**, as we have seen, and it is also very important for society. **Creation was regarded as divine procreation**. Definitely, Yahweh is presented as a potter, like many other Near Eastern gods (see the Egyptian Khnum), who **formed the human foetus in the earth mother's womb**. Then, the **male adam is born from the female adamah**, the genders being clearly indicated in the Hebrew, suggesting that **she was his mother**. Benjamin even goes on to argue that **Yahweh acted as a miwife** by bringing the child, the adam, **out of the earth-goddess Adamah**.¹⁸

¹⁷ Reik, Theodor, *The Re-emerging Mother-Goddess (from Pagan Rites in Judaism)*, <https://magdelene.wordpress.com/2009/04/24/the-re-emerging-mother-goddess/>

¹⁸ Beaulieu, Stéphane, *Eve's Ritual: The Judahite Sacred Marriage Rite*, pp. 206-207, https://www.academia.edu/32203467/Eves_Ritual_the_Judahite_Sacred_Marriage_Rite

God the Father Also Named Adam
(Counterpart of Wife Adamah, & Adam a Name Title also Given to His Son)

So, we see an ancient precedent or perhaps even evidence for the idea that the name Adamah was applied as an aspect, perhaps through syncretism, to the Hebrew Mother goddess, more commonly known as Asherah. Similar to the fact that the **Mother Goddess has this name**, the **Father God seems to have a name like this too**. Some would observe that his name normally is either El (Elohim) or Yahweh.

Yahweh, from an LDS perspective is normally the son, Jehovah. Nevertheless, at times in early LDS applications, the Father was also referred to by the name Jehovah, perhaps yet another name that the Son had inherited from his Father. But in this case, to **parallel the name Adamah, the Father also seems to have had the name of Adam**. This name was not just the name of the first mortal man on the earth, who was also his son, who LDS would generally refer to as Michael, the name applied to the pre-existent son Adam.

To re-enforce the fact that the name Adam was anciently used to refer to Elohim in the ancient world, we will now turn to some ancient Christian sources as a precedent. Firstly, we will discuss a **Greek** word which in some groups in the ancient world was used as a **name for God**, which is *Adamas*. This name has an obvious likeness to the names Adam and Adamah. It is used in word-plays with the name Adam in ancient literature. The word *adamas* in Greek means *diamond*. In English we get the word *adamant* from this word, meaning something hard and unyielding.¹⁹ In the ancient Christian hymn called the Hymn of the Pearl, we read: “and they girt me with a diamond (b'adamus).” Hugh Nibley commented on this:

We associated Adam's diamond with the Stone of Truth in the Book of Breathings. In this context, the diamond identifies the speaker with Adam . . . [T]he coincidence of the words Adam, diamond, and adamant being intentional [i.e. a word-play].²⁰

¹⁹ <http://www.biblelearn.com/east0079.htm>, emphasis added

²⁰ *Message of the Joseph Smith Papyri: An Egyptian Endowment*, second edition p. 489. The first edition of Nibley's book contained the wording

So, some groups of ancient Christians associated the word *badamas* (diamond) with the word Adam and man in general, because as a word-play or pun. The Greek word for diamond or adamant is *adamas*.

Anciently, translators that were translating something from Hebrew into Greek would sometimes attach an S at the end of the name, which is the Greek nominative ending. We saw it used in the name Elias, which we spoke about previously, which is the Greek form of the name Elijah. Another example, the Hebrew Yacob (represented in English as the names Jacob and James) in Greek is Iacobus. The Hebrew name Yeshua (represented in English as Joshua or Jesus) in Greek is Iesus. The name Yeremiah (represented in English as Jeremiah or Jeremy) is Ieremias. The name Isaiah in Greek is Esaia, and so on. You get the point. It is only natural, then, that a translator rendering the word **Adam as a name into Greek, may render it as a nominative form of Adamas**. And by coincidence, as we already saw above, this is the Greek word for diamond.

‘Lady of the Rib’: Mother Goddess Similar Parallels with Eve: Wisdom/Foresight

The Gnostics were ancient heretical sects of Christians. A number of ancient Gnostic systems had a belief in what they call the Primeval Man, or the “Proto-Anthropos.” Sometimes he is also called just “Anthropos,” the Greek word for man. This perfect man was known by the name of “Adamas” to some of these groups. His consort, the **Gnostic Heavenly Mother** figure, was known as “**Perfect Knowledge**” or “**Thought**” (*Ennoia* or *Epinoia*). Sometimes she was referred to as “**Sophia**,” which means “**Wisdom**” in Greek. And Ennoia bore the

“word-play” and the second edition has this language editorially clarified a bit, with the phrase word-play dropped for some reason. I think the original phrase was more precise than just calling it a “coincidence.” But John Gee and the other editors of the Second Edition would have to explain their reasoning for the change. Calling it a coincidence seems to imply a claim that it was at least accident without committing to the conclusion that the **original author intended** it that way, whereas calling it a word-play seems to imply something deliberate. I say it is deliberate.

“Euter-anthropos” or Son of Man. The Catholic Encyclopedia says that “According to Valentinus, Adam was created in the name of Anthrôpos [Man] . . .” And furthermore, “In the Clementine Homilies the cosmogonic Anthrôpos [Man] is strangely mixed up with the historical figure of the first man, Adam.”²¹ Calling the Heavenly Mother figure by the name of “Wisdom” is not unlike the usage of the word in Proverbs: “Wisdom crieth without; she uttereth her voice in the streets . . .”²² Thus, this is a female personification of wisdom, that many believe is tied to the Heavenly mother. Another name for a Heavenly Mother figure in ancient Sumer (Iraq/Land of Shinar) was *Inana*, which is not all that far off from *Ennoia*, and the Gnostics may have latched on to such things. *Inana* was derived from the words *Nin-Ana*, meaning “Lady or Queen of Heaven.” Another Sumerian name for a Heavenly Mother figure (as we had mentioned previously) is *Nin-ti* (“**Lady of the Rib**”). In that language, “**ti**” means both “**rib**” and “**life**.” Another Sumerian Heavenly Mother figure was *Nin-hursag*, and her epithet was “Mother of All the Living.” Clearly, these names in **Mesopotamian religions are not referring to the mortal mother of mankind from the Garden of Eden, but instead are referring to a goddess**. Nevertheless, it was Eve who had the spiritual **foresight** to see that she must partake of the fruit, enabling the human race to fall, because her husband couldn't see that necessity. It is clear, therefore, from this evidence that with **Eve and the Mother Goddess there is a similar duality**, just as there is with Adam and the Father God. It was a **grand paradox** in the fall, that there was a necessity to break one directive from God to enable progression and the keeping of the more important commandment. **Eve was the embodiment of wisdom** in that episode. Indeed, she is the grand bringer of both death and life:

. . . [T]he mystery of the woman is no less a mystery than death . . .
Woman, as the magical door from the other world, through which
 lives enter into this, stands naturally in counterpoise to the door of death .
 . . [T]he men's role in the hunt had to be supported by the magic of their
 women . . .²³

²¹ <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/06592a.htm>, emphasis added

²² Proverbs 1:20

²³ Joseph Campbell, *Primitive Mythology: The Masks of God*, pp. 388-389, emphasis added

Magic, in this sense, is religious power in the shamanistic religions. But if we are careful in our use of the word, it can also have an application in ours. Not to bring apostate thinking into our religion, but just as a descriptive word and to draw a comparison. **Magic can mean either superstition, or in a more positive sense in true religion**, it can refer to things that are symbolic in their orientation, order or pattern. They form a symbolic order. But in this sense, as applied to true religion, it is also real power, definitely not to be confused with the usual superstitious idea of magic. Women are the gate into this world. That is their power. And a woman, to her credit, also set in motion the process that brought death, so that man might be.

One author writes that “**Proverbs 9 . . . tells of a woman named Wisdom who is portrayed at the creation of the world alongside Yahweh . . .**”²⁴ From the evidence available in the Hebrew Old Testament, **Asherah** seems to have been the proper name for the Heavenly Mother in **Hebrew**, just as the name of the Heavenly Father from the Hebrew is Elohim, and the name of the Son is Jehovah. It is evident that the Wisdom Woman in the Proverbs is Asherah, the Heavenly Mother, as she was known in the Hebrew Bible, though her worship was forbidden by the Prophets, because it ran contrary to the proper order. For example, Jeremiah was fighting against the worship of the Queen of Heaven. He was walking a tightrope, because he knew of her existence, but wanted to discourage the pagan worship of her. Nephi’s writings about **Mary** the mother of Jesus in the Book of Mormon, as pointed out by BYU scholars, follow the **type and pattern of the Asherah**.

Other names for the Heavenly Mother figure in the ancient world are *Isis* (*Est* or *Aset*), *Ishtar* (from whom we get the name Easter for our Holiday), *Ashtoreth*. The Hebrew word for “Woman” or “Wife” is *Ish-shah* or *Ishto*.

One of the names for a Heavenly Father figure in Egypt is **Osiris** (*Wsir* or *Oser*), who was both a **Father and a Son**, and a dying-god figure. The hieroglyph for the name is made up of a throne and an eye, denoting **seer, priest and king**. And the symbol for Isis was also the throne. The **Hebrew word Aser is clearly related to the Egyptian name of Oser**, and is also the root word in the name Asherah.

²⁴ *FARMS Review* 2007, Volume 1, “Does God Have A Wife?” by Alyson

The **rib** is a symbol used in Genesis that connotes the **seed of man**.²⁵

Surprisingly enough, the word **aphar**, or **dust**, is also a symbol that connotes the **same** thing. Hugh Nibley pointed out that **abaq** (**wrestle**) as a verb also means to **embrace**, or the *Hieros Gamos*. He mentioned the very “**puzzling episode**,” as he called it, from the scriptures about Jacob wrestling with God. He points out that the word “conventionally translated by 'wrestled' (ye'aveq) can just as well mean 'embrace,’” and it was in the “**ritual embrace** that Jacob received a **new name** and the bestowal of **priestly and kingly** power at sunrise. . .” The reception of a new name is also a reception of a new title sometimes denoting some sort of **new position** or call or role. And Nibley links it to the “**Egyptian coronation embrace** . . .”²⁶ As a **verb**, it also means to **bedust (to soil or cover with dust)**.²⁷ And as a **noun**, that word also means **dust** or powder. Interestingly enough, we also have the similar sounding **chabaq**, meaning “**to clasp (the hands or in embrace)**” or “**to fold**.” The Lord told **Abraham** that he would make his “**seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered**.”²⁸ We also read, “**Who can count the dust of Jacob, and the number of the fourth part of Israel?**”²⁹ From the Book of Moses, we read that, “**as ye were born into the world by water, and blood, and the spirit, which I have made, and so became of dust a living soul, even so ye must be born again into the kingdom of heaven . . .**”³⁰ The point is, all of these symbols, **whether it be the rib or the dust, all stand for the procreative** essence or power **passing from the Father to the Mother**. In the

²⁵ Genesis 2:21-25

²⁶ *Message of the Joseph Smith Papyri*, 2nd Edition, p. 434

²⁷ *Strong's* 79, 80

²⁸ Genesis 13:15-16; see also Genesis 28:13-14

²⁹ Numbers 23:10

³⁰ Moses 6: 59

case of the Polynesian creation myth of the first humans, both the notion of “dust” or “sand” as well as a sacred embrace is present:

Tane' created, but his creations did not give him the satisfaction he desired. Hitherto he had produced trees, shrubs, birds, and objects unresponsive; he desired progeny of his own form, but mortal. Then certain of the gods called to Tane', bidding him seek the beach of Kura-waka, where rose the mons of the earth-mother, of Papa'. There, he was to gather **sand** and shape a body similar to his own. He did so. He completed the figure, **extended himself** upon it, breathed life into it, and a living being quivered to warmth and motion, and he named her Hine-ahu-one.³¹

God as Original Farmer from Which We Came

Now that we understand some of the basics of this more spiritual or figurative understanding of these symbols, we translate the following scriptures in plainness, plugging in everything we understand now about these symbols into our new and figurative translation of these verses from Genesis:

And the LORD God formed Adam **from the seed of Man**, and put into him his spirit, the breath of life, and Adam became a living soul.³²

In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, **till thou return unto Man; for out of Him wast thou taken: for the seed thou art, and unto Man shalt thou return.**³³

As LeGrande Richards wrote:

³¹ Andersen, Johannes C., *Myths of the Polynesians*, p. 407, emphasis added

³² Genesis 2:7

³³ Genesis 3:19

Thus, the spirit shall **return to God, which it could not do if it had never been with him**, just as the body shall return to the earth, which it could not do if it had not been taken therefrom.³⁴

Spiritually speaking then (or on a more esoteric level), **both the spirit and the body ultimately return to God who produced them**, when the spirit and body are both redeemed, being the **soul** of man. In the myth of Osiris from Egypt, the goddess Nephtys was the wife of Set, the brother of Osiris. Nephtys tricked Osiris into sleeping with her. She said this to Osiris: “. . . [Y]ou Osiris the Good, lord of fertility will fill my womb **with seed and plow this furrow**.”³⁵ To the Egyptians, “a **virgin** was poetically referred to as an ‘**unplowed field**’.”³⁶ In these societies of the near east, they used lots of **metaphors** based on **farming**. As Campbell tells us: “. . . [A]mong planting folk, in the same way of make-believe, the work of gardening, tilling and harvesting was **likened to the mysteries of begetting and of birth**.”³⁷ Campbell goes on to say, “The **virgin earth** [was that] **from which Adam had been born** . . . But then God Himself became the Virgin's child, so that there have now been **two men born of virgins**: from the first, Adam, came sorrow; from the second, joy.”³⁸ The Heavenly Mother was an Immortal Being, therefore being a “Virgin,” and spiritually speaking, she is indeed the Virgin Earth, for that is a **deliberate anthropomorphic metaphor from the ancients**. Note also that the **gods of Egypt from which other gods were begotten were Geb, the earth god**, or personification of the earth, and his wife *Nut*, the personification of the sky, or the expanse of heaven. These two were, in turn, children of Shu (the personification of the air) and Tefnut (the personification of moisture and warm air). So it is not surprising that **Hebrew** deities would be **symbolically represented as if they are personifications of the elements**. Now, let us review the scripture about the creation of Eve again:

³⁴ *Marvelous Work and a Wonder*, p. 290

³⁵ Dee, Johnathan, *Chronicles of Ancient Egypt*, p. 35

³⁶ <http://www.touregypt.net/featurestories/min.htm>

³⁷ Joseph Campbell, *Creative Mythology: The Masks of God*, p. 385

³⁸ *ibid.*, p. 469

And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.³⁹

Plugging in the Metaphors: Procreation Before Adam & Eve

B. H. Roberts said: “**We are all 'formed' of the dust** of the ground, though instead of being molded as a brick we are brought forth by the **natural laws of procreation; so also was Adam and his wife** in some older world. And as for the **story of the rib, under it I believe the mystery of procreation is hidden.**”⁴⁰

Let's test this using the Hebrew, to see whether or not there is some hidden exegesis of the rib story that reflects human procreation. Let us plug into this our new understanding of the rib, replacing it with the word seed. But we must also plug-in the identities of the people who are actually involved here, or the whole thing can get real confusing. There is **clearly a duality of men involved here, not just one man**:

And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam (Michael), and he slept: and he (**Elohim**) **took one of his (Elohim's) seeds**, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the seed, which the LORD God had **taken from Man (Elohim), made he a woman** (Eve), and brought her (Eve) unto the man (Michael). And Adam (Michael) said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she (Eve) shall be called Woman, because **she was taken out of Man (Elohim)**. Therefore shall a **man (Michael) leave** his Father (Elohim) and his Mother (the Heavenly Mother), **and shall cleave unto his wife** (Eve): and they shall be one

³⁹ Genesis 2:21-25

⁴⁰ *Man's Relationship to Deity*, pp. 279-280

flesh. And they were both naked, the man (Michael) and his wife (Eve), and were not ashamed.⁴¹

Rib / Seed Similarity

The meaning of “**taking one of his seeds**” or “**taking one of his ribs**” is clear enough. But, let us review it more closely for a second. In the Hebrew, the word for “one” or *echad* means “**united**” or “first in order.”⁴² The word for “**rib**” is *tsela*, meaning a rib (because a rib is curved), or the side of a person, or a timber or plank.⁴³ This is a deliberate word-play on the fact that the word *tsela* **sounds like zera**, which is the Hebrew word that means “**seed, sowing, or offspring**.”⁴⁴ There seems to be a **deliberate pun** there between the two words.

Closing Up the Flesh: Creation From Mother ‘Earth’

Now, we will deal with the phrase “closing the flesh in the stead thereof” in the Hebrew. This phrase in Hebrew is *va yyisgor basar tacht ennah*. The phrase “closed up” is the Hebrew word *sghr* (yyisgor), meaning **to shut up, or to surrender or to enclose**.⁴⁵ For the words “the flesh” we have the word *basar*,

⁴¹ Genesis 2:21-25

⁴² Strong's 259

⁴³ Strong's 6763

⁴⁴ Strong's 2233

⁴⁵ Strong's 5462

meaning **flesh**, or by euphemism, “**pudenda**.”⁴⁶ Pudenda is defined as the human external **genital** organs.⁴⁷

Now, for the word “**instead**” or in Hebrew **tacht**, the meaning is “the **bottom** (as depressed)” or a “**depression**” or a “**gap**.”⁴⁸ The significance of this word may not be apparent until we see the figurative meaning of another derived word, **tacht**, meaning the “**lowermost**” or “the depths” or figuratively “a **pit**” or “the **womb**.”⁴⁹

Now for the word “**thereof**.” This is “**ennah**” or “**hennah**” meaning a feminine third person pronoun, meaning literally “**of her**.”⁵⁰ Note that it is word is **feminine**, and that the **object of the sentence is a female** entity. So literally, this translates as “**enclosing the phallus in her womb**.” For a similar exegesis of this scripture, we turn to a Biblical Journal:

The last clause of this verse in the Targum [Onkelos] is, **vumlee bisra techota**; which is a literal translation of the Hebrew vayisgor baasaar tachtenah, rendered in the common version, and **closed up the flesh instead thereof**.

The Chaldee word vumlee, means to **fill, to replenish**. And the word techota, which is the Chaldee translation of the Hebrew tachtenah, rendered in the common version instead thereof, refers to the subject under consideration, the woman. It is a reference to the substantive gneezer, a help, in the 18th verse . . .

⁴⁶ Strong's 1319, 1329

⁴⁷ <http://www.dictionary.com>

⁴⁸ Strong's 8478, 8430

⁴⁹ Strong's 8482

⁵⁰ Strong's 2004, 2007

This last clause of the Chaldee of Onkelos reads—Thus he replenished flesh under her, or subject to her, as the mother of all living . . . ⁵¹

Note that even in the Targum Onkelos, the ancient translators into Aramaic translated the word *vayisgor* (enclose) as *vumlee* (to fill, multiply, or replenish). A related scripture is found in the Psalms:

For thou hast possessed my reins: **thou hast covered me in my mother's womb.** I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when **I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth.**⁵²

Indeed, the “**lowest parts**” here are in a **parallelism with the mother's womb**. And significantly, it is in the lowest parts of the “**earth**,” coming full circle, which is *erets*,⁵³ which is, significantly, the same as *adamah*, or **ground**, or the Mother Goddess. Once again, the elemental connection is shown, of the **fertile earth**. Even more evidence for this exegesis comes from the Gnostic *Apocryphon of John*, showing that some Gnostics understood this scripture in precisely this way:

Then the Epinoia of the light hid herself in him (Adam). And the chief archon wanted to bring her out of his rib. But the Epinoia of the light cannot be grasped. Although darkness pursued her, it did not catch her. And he brought a part of his power out of him. And he made another creature, in the form of a woman, according to the likeness of the Epinoia which had appeared to him. And he brought the part which he had taken

⁵¹ *The Classical Journal*, For March and June, 1819, Volume 19, London, emphasis in original

⁵² Psalm 139:13-15

⁵³ Strong's 776

from the power of the man into the female creature, and not as Moses said, ‘his rib-bone.’⁵⁴

This exegesis interprets this as **the seed, or procreative “power,” being introduced into the female entity**. Now, after exploring the evidence for this exegesis, it becomes very obvious that the true intent of the sentence means that the **male phallus was being enclosed in the womb** of the female entity. The **female entity is not Eve**, but the Mother of All Living, the **Mother of Eve**, because the person **providing the seed** to produce Eve is the consort of the Mother, or in other words, the **Father** God. It should come as no surprise that the Hebrew word used for the female entity is **Ennah or Hennah**, when the Greek name for the Gnostic Heavenly Mother is **Ennoia/Epinoia** (meaning wisdom/knowledge), and the Babylonian, **Inanna**, her Sumerian name. The name Inanna is derived from the name **Nin-anna**, meaning lady or **queen (nin) of heaven (anna/enna)**.⁵⁵ **Anat** was the name of a Canaanite goddess. Also, the name of the Hurrian mother goddess was **Hannahanna**, which some believe was derived from Inana. The name of **Enna or Henna** for the Heavenly Mother appears to reflect her **symbolic role** as the **Goddess of the elemental sky (just as the Egyptian Nut)**. And this is because **she is the consort of Adamas or the Heavenly Adam**, the name used for our Heavenly Father in a symbolic role. The **Adam** was the **planter of the seed in the Adamah, or “ground,”** or the Heavenly Mother figure.

So we see that the scriptures actually do teach the same doctrine as LDS tradition, that Adam and Eve were created through **procreative** acts of Heavenly Parents in their **capacity as a married couple, in their exercise of a Priesthood sacrament**. There is no mystery here, although **heavily symbolic language is used to mask** the meaning.

Adam’s Sleep

⁵⁴ Gerard P Luttikhuizen, *Gnostic Revisions of Genesis Stories And Early Jesus Traditions*, p. 69

⁵⁵ see Jeremiah 7:18, 44:17-19, 25

Now, there is one more point here, though that must be made. The scripture says that Adam slept. The correct understanding of this is the sleep of forgetfulness, when a spirit takes upon him a body, as Brigham Young interpreted it:

When the spirit takes a body, a veil is dropped so that every thing the spirit knew previously is forgotten. Natural sleep is a fit illustration of this. When a person is in a sound sleep the assassin's knife might be held for hours to his throat and he be perfectly unconscious of the fact. His house might be wrapped in flames, and his children consuming, without having the least idea of what is transpiring around him. So when the spirit comes into this earthly tabernacle all is forgot, which it formerly knew, the same as a person forgets the doings of yesterday when tonight he is wrapped in deep sleep. But **when we wake up in the morning we remember** what we had forgotten.⁵⁶

A New Translation

So, using all of our evidence that we have gathered, and plugging in all evidence for the correct sense for all of these things that these symbols represent, these verses are **translated** in an exegetical manner most plainly, respectfully and delicately in this way:

And the Father (Elohim) caused a deep sleep of forgetfulness to fall upon Adam (Michael), and he (Michael) slept: and, **the Father (Elohim) took seed from His (Elohim's) loins, planting it in the womb of the Mother (Ennah/Ennoia/Innan); And from the seed, which the Father had taken from His own loins, made He a woman**, and brought her unto Adam (Michael). And Adam (Michael) said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because **she was taken out of Man (of Holiness)**. Therefore shall a man (Michael) **leave his Father (Elohim) and his Mother (the Heavenly Mother)**, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.⁵⁷

⁵⁶ Watson, Elden J. ed. *Brigham Young Addresses*, Volume 2, 19 Feb. 1853.

⁵⁷ Genesis 2:21-25

Indeed, the issue of the **seed coming from the Father** is precisely what **Brigham Young clearly** taught:

It is said by Moses the historian that the Lord caused a deep sleep to come upon Adam and took **from his side a rib** and formed the woman that Adam called Eve. This **should be interpreted** that **the Man Adam like all other men had the seed within him to propagate his species**, but not the Woman. She conceives the seed but she does not produce it. Consequently **she was taken from the side or bowels of her Father.** This **explains the mystery of Moses’ dark sayings in regard to Adam and Eve.**⁵⁸

In the Charles Walker Journal, entry for June 11, 1892, it states that Wilford **Woodruff** and George Q. **Cannon** taught that “**Adam was . . . made the same as all other men and Gods are made; and that the seed of man was the dust of the earth . . .**”⁵⁹

McConkie: Adam Begotten Immortal vs Christ Only Begotten in the Flesh

While it is true that Christ was the “Only Begotten” of the Father in the flesh, Adam was also a son of God, literally. That may seem confusing, but the difference between the body of the Savior and the body of Adam is significant and critical. Bruce R. **McConkie** writes about this issue, saying that Adam was created as all other men, quoting from a First Presidency pronouncement, and

⁵⁸ As recorded in the *L. John Nuttall Journal*, entry for February 7, 1877, http://en.fairmormon.org/Mormonism_and_temples/Endowment/Adam-God_and_the_%22Lecture_at_the_Veil%22

⁵⁹ *Charles Walker Journal*, June 11, 1892

then he went on, pointing out the critical **difference between Christ's body and Adam's body** when they were created:

Adam was created in immortality, but that Christ came to earth as a mortal; thus our Lord is the **Only Begotten in the flesh, meaning into this mortal sphere** of existence. **Adam** came to earth to dwell in **immortality until the Fall** changed his status to that of mortality. Those who have ears to hear will understand these things.⁶⁰

Eternal Adam

It is clear now, that it was Eve's Father alluded to **from which the “rib” or seed was taken**, as we read in those verses, and it **was not from Adam or Michael**. **Yet** the person that the rib was taken from in the Hebrew is **called “Adam.”** When a name-title is shared between two individuals, a person is able to **share at least some of the roles** of the other, and become **identified with him**. This is much like how the name Elias is a title that can be assumed by many that fulfill a particular role denoted by that symbolic name, thus becoming an incarnation or instance of the role of Elias. The two people meet at the **veil** in the temple to become one in **mirror image**, a metaphorical **union** of person. Thus, **Father Adam brings the son Adam through the veil**, welcoming him into **full “fellowship”** with the Gods. The Father is inviting His son through **to become what He is**. The **son Adam (Michael)** would eventually “incarnate,” or **assume the role of the Father Adam (Elohim) to his own posterity in eternity**. In other words, he **went through the same stages of existence** that Elohim had previously been through, and then became as he is. This means that the role of an **exalted** personage is just an **extension** or **later stage** of the role a person is when they are ascending to become exalted. Between the earthly Adam and the Heavenly Adam, there is a fusion of persons. One part of the archetype represents a **mortal Adam**, while the other part of the Archetype represents an **exalted Adam**. The time that an Adam spends in mortality is but a sliver of his existence. Adam is **one eternal round, from everlasting to everlasting, or eternal lives**. This is another sense in which the **word Adam may mean “many,”** because of the **many incarnations** and lives (or cycles) throughout eternity.

⁶⁰ *Sermons and Writings of Bruce R. McConkie*, p. 199.

In all that we have discussed, we have been careful to emphasize that neither Elohim nor Michael ever fell into another mortality the way members of certain apostate groups believe, and that the identities of Adam and Elohim are not mixed up. Some people believe that these misinterpretations began with Brigham Young. It would be nice if it turns out to be true that Brigham **Young was speaking in a veiled manner**. Some LDS apologists suggest that this is what Brigham Young was doing. We should not be surprised if President Young was actually teaching something contrary to the current stance of the Church, because it is clear that sometimes certain **doctrines go through developmental stages**. Bruce R. McConkie in a widely circulated letter to Eugene England expressed his view that it was true that President Young's theology differed from our current Church doctrine. The letter is a part of the public record now, because of whoever it was that gave it to some Anti-Mormons. But here is an important part of the letter from Elder McConkie:

I have received violent reactions from Ogden Kraut and other cultists in which they have expounded upon the views of Brigham Young and others of the early Brethren relative to Adam. They have plain and clear quotations saying all of the things about Adam which I say are false. The quotations are in our literature and form the basis of a worship system followed by many of the cultists who have been excommunicated from the Church . . . If what I am about to say should be taken out of context and published in Dialogue or elsewhere, it would give an entirely erroneous impression and would not properly present the facts. As it happens, **I am a great admirer of Brigham Young and a great believer in his doctrinal presentations . . . Nonetheless, as Joseph Smith so pointedly taught, a prophet is not always a prophet**, only when he is acting as such . . . Sometimes a prophet gives personal views which are not endorsed and approved by the Lord. Yes, President **Young did teach that Adam was the father of our spirits**, and all the related things that the cultists ascribe to him. **This, however, is not true**. He expressed views that are **out of harmony with the gospel** . . . ⁶¹

⁶¹ <http://mrm.org/bruce-mcconkies-rebuke-of-eugene-england>

Duel Adam Interpretation Supports Many Prophetic Teachings

Only Brigham Young can tell us precisely what was in his mind, and he is not present here in mortality. Anything anyone says about it is speculation. What I have to say is, **even if Brigham Young got it wrong on these points, we can profit intellectually from the parts of his theology that are not contrary** to current Church doctrine. Furthermore, there is an **explanation for Brigham Young's statements called the Adam Senior-Adam Junior** explanation. This suggests that there are at least two Adams. One is Elohim, and the other is Michael the Archangel. This **concept can actually stand on its own with or without Brigham Young's statements** on Adam-God. As we saw in the previous chapter, the **Genesis account in the Hebrew actually does have a dynamic of a duality of persons going on**. This is independent of anything Brigham Young ever said on the subject. Perhaps he was struggling in the Spirit and never got this concept refined. He was **probably on the right track** but it wasn't fully developed in his mind. It is true that doctrines go through developmental stages sometimes, and that we cannot expect everything to be known at any point in time. We recognize and revere Brigham Young as a great prophet and as the Lord's anointed. Partial revelations that come before the full truth is known are a common occurrence in various historic areas of doctrinal development. I believe that this is the best explanation that Brigham **Young was working on the concept and didn't get the full picture at the time**. And now **other people in the Church have been led to discover the Adam-Junior-Adam-Senior explanation** upon much reflection. It is my personal belief that the Holy Ghost was leading Brigham Young in his ponderings, although he did not get the entire revelation on it. I believe the Holy Ghost also inspired various church scholars to come to the understanding of it that they have come to.

Correct Identities Enable A Consistent View of Eternal Lives Doctrine

As we have seen, the core of the Adam-God controversy has to do with the **confusion of the identities and roles of Michael and Elohim** among the members of apostate groups. There is actually nothing wrong with what I would label the “peripheral” teachings of Adam-God that can be separated out from that identity and role confusion. Elder McConkie himself actually privately taught

and believed most of the other Adam-God concepts that originated with Brigham Young, while rejecting those others, according to the report of Reed Durham:

“I phoned B. R. McConkie on Friday afternoon, April 29th 1966 . . . He said it was a true doctrine that God the Father, **Elohim, a divine resurrected being came down to this earth** after its creation, **with a wife and produced** in the natural way of sexual intercourse, a child who grew up and became known as Adam. They did the same and brought forth a girl who grew up and became Eve. They had bodies of **flesh and bone etc., but were not mortal** (not till they fell). They (Adam and Eve) were not resurrected and not translated beings. God really did create their bodies on this earth. They were **not transported** here (only their spirits). He then said that his **father-in-law told him** that was a true doctrine; that it had been **taught a great deal by President J. F. Smith** (6th president). He also added that President **Joseph Fielding Smith said it was too deep now for most saints**--that's the reason for saying about the **creation of Adam** and Eve in the temple, “It's only **figurative** . . .”⁶²

Thus, there is nothing wrong with these peripheral concepts when coupling them with the correct identities and roles of the individuals involved. This is the **correct doctrine of “multiple families” or “eternal lives” as taught by Bruce R. McConkie, and it keeps the identities of Elohim and Michael straight.** The usual idea of multiple mortalities as taught in apostate cult circles is a notion of reincarnation. It is the idea that a Heavenly Couple who have already passed through a resurrection come down to an earth that they have created and fall into another mortality and become the Adam and Eve of that earth, and then they die and are resurrected again. Any types of **reincarnation**, such as (1) being born again in another body as a baby after death, or (2) falling from one's exaltation into a mortality, or (3) dying again after the resurrection to be resurrected again are **all false** ideas. The Book of Mormon teaches that there is **no separation** of spirit and body **after the resurrection**, and there is only one literal death, and only one literal resurrection:

Now, behold, I have spoken unto you concerning the death of the mortal body, and also concerning the resurrection of the mortal body. I say unto you that this mortal body is raised to an immortal body, that is from death, even from the first death unto life, that they can die no more; their

⁶² <http://www.eldenwatson.net/7AdamGod.htm>

spirits uniting with their bodies, **never to be divided**; thus the whole becoming spiritual and immortal, that they can no more see corruption.⁶³

The “mortalities” that heavenly couples go through after this earth are just **metaphorical**, but are nonetheless analogous to and follow the same **pattern** as the literal mortality in one's second estate. Following Bruce R. McConkie's teaching, an “Adam” (a Heavenly Father) and an “Eve” (a Heavenly Mother) create a generation of spirit children in the celestial realm. Their bodies create spirit children, because when they partake of the things of Heaven to supply raw material, these elements are spiritual in nature. But then comes the time that they create an earth for these children. And then **they must create the physical bodies for these spirit children**. To do so, they metaphorically “fall into a mortality.” But not really or literally. To be more precise and technical, they **condescend to live on that earth for a time**, laying their glory aside for a season. They aren't actually dying or becoming mortal. They are not allowing their glory that usually emanates from their bodies to burn up the new planet. They create a garden, and then they **partake of the fruits** of the new earth, which are earthly elements. Thus, they charge their bodies with the physical, temporal, unrefined elements of the new earth. And of course, as the saying goes, “you are what you eat.” Now their bodies contain the physical materials to create physical bodies for their children. At which point, they procreate, and two children are born, and they start a **new family on the new earth**. Here they stay, raising the two children in the garden naturally, after the same manner that they did their original mortal children in their first literal mortality. This is an entirely **natural** process, and the children grow as normal children would. Then the time comes that their children are sufficiently grown that they are almost ready to be accountable. They are to be married in the garden, in order that they may “leave their mother and father” and “cleave” unto each other and be one flesh. At that point, their Mother and Father leave them for the heavenly realm once again, thus metaphorically “dying” leaving their “mortality” in the garden behind. This is **not a literal dying**, but only metaphorical. And when the Heavenly Couple go back to the celestial realm, they then take upon themselves their glory again, and thus, they are now spiritual beings again. Their bodies rid themselves of any residual temporal matter. So, thus, their children are given charge of the garden, and are left to be tempted of the adversary, at which point, their children eat of the forbidden fruit, and start their actual mortal state. So one may rationally ask, who was the first literal Adam on the earth? Was it the Father who started the mortal

⁶³ Alma 11:45, see also D&C 138:17

state, or was it Michael who started it? It depends on your point of view, as long as you keep your doctrine straight and the identities of individuals straight.

So, to recap, this is likely to be the correct understanding of the concept of Eternal Lives: a continual condescension by Heavenly Parents from planet to planet, but not where they actually fall into a mortal state. It is where they are just in a state to produce mortal bodies for their children and raise them in the garden on each world, but their bodies remain immortal, while their children's new bodies receive the capacity to become mortal. Since they spend a **time on each new world they create**, after the same **pattern** of their life in **mortality**, it is metaphorically a new "mortality." But it isn't literally. Yet it is a new incarnation of the original, re-enacting the original mortality. As Brigham Young said:⁶⁴

We have heard a great deal about Adam and Eve, how they were formed and etc. Some think he was made like an adobe and the Lord breathed into him the breath of life, for we read "from dust thou art and unto dust shalt thou return." Well he was made of the dust of the earth but not of this earth. He was made just the same way you and I are made but on another earth. Adam was an **immortal** being when he came on this earth; He had lived on an earth similar to ours; he had received the Priesthood and the keys thereof, and had been faithful in all things and gained his **resurrection** and his **exaltation**, and was crowned with glory, immortality and eternal lives, and was numbered with the Gods for such he became through his faithfulness, and had **begotten all the spirit** that was to come to this earth. And Eve our common mother who is the mother of all living bore those spirits in the celestial world.⁶⁵

Then, Brigham Young said that "when Adam and Eve got through with their work in this earth, they did not lay their bodies down in the dust, but **returned to the spirit world** from whence they came"⁶⁶ which is their metaphorical "death." We believe that Elohim and his Wife are the parents of our Spirits. Those are the people referred to in this quote that are called "Adam" and "Eve." In other

⁶⁴ As recorded in the *John L. Nuttall Journal*

⁶⁵ http://en.fairmormon.org/Adam-God_and_the_%22Lecture_at_the_Veil%22

⁶⁶ *ibid.*

words, I am applying the roles that Brigham Young is talking **about to the persons of Elohim and his wife. Whether he meant that or not in the end is not my concern.** I am only concerned by properly identifying those individuals who actually do have those roles, rightly dividing the word of truth, as I see it.

Indeed, it is as Brigham Young said that “every **faithful son of God, becomes, as it were, Adam to the race that springs from his loins . . .**”⁶⁷ And about righteous women, he said that each one would be exalted to “**become an Eve—a Queen of Heaven—the wife of a God . . .**”⁶⁸

Reportedly, there is a document entitled “Man Know Thyself” that was in the possession of N. B. Lundwall. It also teaches this same idea. I have not been able to find out the origin of this document, or its authorship, but I think it is important enough to still include here. It has very interesting content. It indicates that Heavenly Parents condescend and lay aside their glory for a time, in order to start a new family on an earth:

You call your spiritual children together and hold a council with them; and in the contemplation of a new earth, a savior must be provided. You call for volunteers, there may be a number of bright sons reply. It is your right to choose the one dearest to your own heart, he being worthy of the position. Another among the volunteers may become offended, and rebel against the plan, and lead many away with him. The chosen one is ordained to his calling, a calling in the Priesthood, and placed in full charge of the organization of the new earth, its redemption and sanctification . . .

The Seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord. That day, you and your wife, and all your children—as many as will follow you—will spend in the new earth, in worship and thanksgiving.

Now comes the morning of the new week in which mortality must begin, and your spiritual children must be introduced into mortality. Two must go before them and prepare the way for them. Whom will you send? Would you not say to [your] wife, “Come, Mother, let you and I lay aside our Celestial glory for a little season and eat of the elements of this new earth, that we may again become of the earth earthy, and thereby our

⁶⁷ *Journal of Discourses* 10:355; November 6, 1864

⁶⁸ October 8th, 1861 discourse

offspring will be mortal, and thus we will **begin the begetting of mortal bodies for these, our spiritual children**; and when they have grown to maturity in their mortal estate, we will command them to multiply and replenish the earth. We have passed through earth life, death and the resurrection. We have **power to lay aside this Celestial Glory and we have power to take it up again.**”

To which she, a faithful Mother, will reply: “Yes, we will **partake of the elements of this new earth**. We will make this **sacrifice** for our spiritual children that they also may continue on in the law of everlasting progression and become like unto us, for as the Gods are, some may become.”⁶⁹

When put in these terms, the idea of Heavenly Couples condescending to create the bodies for their spirit children is beautiful and doesn't contradict any basics of the gospel that we already know. It is just unfortunate that the members of apostate groups have misinterpreted it and have taught false doctrines about it.

⁶⁹ <http://www.ldshistory.net/adam-god/ag5.html>

Circular Time & The Ages or Aeons of Eternity

In the scriptures, it defines a “mortality” of time in a telestial world as **7000 years**,⁷⁰ because it is the time of its “temporal” existence. And the “temporal” time on earth of a person's life in the scriptures is equated with a man's “probationary state.”⁷¹ The analogous time period in celestial time is 2.555 billion years of earth time, or 7000 years in time “after the time of Kolob . . .”⁷² W. W. Phelps⁷³ in a letter to William Smith, when he stated:

Eternity, agreeably to the records found in the catacombs of Egypt has been going on in this system (not this world) almost two thousand five-hundred and fifty-five millions of years.⁷⁴

So this is one celestial “cycle” analogous to an earthly probation or temporal existence. So, how do we figure that? A day in Kolob is 1000 years according to the time of this earth (Abraham 3:4). So that means that everything in earth time must be multiplied by a factor of 365,000 to get an analogous product in Kolob time, because there are 365 days to a year in our reckoning, and 1000 years in earth time to a day in Kolob. So, if we do the math, then we end up with this

⁷⁰ D&C 77:6

⁷¹ 1 Nephi 15:32-32; 2 Nephi 2:21; D&C 29:43

⁷² Abraham 5:13

⁷³ Incidentally, Phelps was one of the scribes who worked on the Kirtland Egyptian Papers

⁷⁴ N. B. Lundwall, *Temples of the Most High*, Sixth Edition, p. 246, quoting from *Times and Seasons*, Vol. 5, pp. 757-61.

equation: $7000 \times 365 \times 1000 = 2.555 \text{ billion}$.⁷⁵ Could this be some sort of celestial cycle that is analogous to a mortal probationary time of a telestial world?

The Chinese have what is called “circular time” in their mythology, a cyclical pattern. A mythologist named Wang Xiaoliang describes this phenomenon:

He names this cluster of myths “Circularly Returning to the Original Order.” He finds the basic plot to be like this: (1) there was a mythical paradise (the original cosmic order); (2) the original paradise was broken (because of human's rebellion against the gods, wars between gods, or the world deluge); (3) the paradise was reconstructed (resumed the initial state, or returned to the original order) . . . This circular conception of time deeply influenced many famous Chinese classic novels . . . In these novels, the protagonist(s) all experience an initial order (sacred and orderly time), then go through disasters and adversities in the secular world (the original order is destroyed), and, in the end, return back to the original order again (back to the sacred and orderly time).⁷⁶

There are many parallels here to Mormonism, where the same types of cycles are evident. The **original paradise** existed in heaven in **pre-existence** prior to the war in heaven the original, initial state of paradise and innocence. Then Satan rebelled with one-third of the spirits who were cast out of heaven. Then after that war, the original order was re-established. So that was one cycle. **Next, after the creation, a pristine state existed in the paradise of the garden.** Adam and Eve fell, and they were cast out of the garden into the lone and dreary world. After the probationary state of man, the **Savior will return, and the world will be restored to this pristine state of paradise** from before the fall of man. That is the next cycle. Then at the end of the Millennium, Satan will be loosed, and the sacred and orderly state will be broken once again, and war will be waged in the war of Gog and Magog, for Satan to **finally be overcome by Adam who is Michael, once again as he was in pre-existence.** That is another cycle. Then the **newly exalted Heavenly Parents from our generation will go on to create their own celestial families**, and the grand **cycle will start once again.** So there

⁷⁵ see for example <http://chriscarrollsmith.blogspot.com/2008/06/w-w-phelps-on-age-of-earth.html>

⁷⁶ Yang, Lihui; An, Deming; Turner, Jessica Anderson, *Handbook of Chinese Mythology*, p. 76)

are smaller cycles here on earth within a grand Celestial Cycle that runs from each pre-existence to the end of new earths that are created.

Shamans of the Arctic also have a concept of spiritual time as rhythmic:

Throughout the Arctic regions, the principal means of contact with the spirits was via the shaman's drum. The distinctive tambourine drum was used exclusively by shamans, and its beat was said to echo the 'heartbeat' of the spirit world. Such drums are not thought of as inanimate objects, but are said to possess a life and motivation of their own.⁷⁷

So we see that among the Shamans, there is this idea of a rhythmic “heartbeat” in the spirit world, and Hugh Nibley elsewhere has pointed out the connection between the hypocephalus and the Shaman's drum. The drum itself is the prop or symbol or incarnation in the temporal world of this heartbeat. The drum is the physical object that provides the sacred ordering. So, the spiritual is sealed or linked to the temporal by way of this incarnation. Professor James Faulconer says:

The present can change the past or there is no difference between repentance and simple regret . . . The moments of a rhythm cannot be discreet as are the moments of a time line. If they were, they would not be moments of a rhythm. Rhythmic moments require (“contain” already) their before and their after to be at all. One hit on the head of a drum is not part of any rhythm; each beat in a rhythm is what it is only in its relation to each of the other beats . . .⁷⁸

The meaning or significance of the past is entirely contingent on the current reality of the present and the reality-to-be in the future. Sins can be blotted out because their meaning to the universe has been effectively changed through the power of the atonement in the present. However, the past has not been changed, because that which has happened will always be so. The occurrence has not been deleted from history. It has not been erased from time and space, and its effects may not entirely be blotted out. Instead, the meaning of that act to the present and the future has been changed. It has been blotted out, or evened out, and compensated for, in such a way that it can be left behind, and the present and

⁷⁷ Hunt, Norman Bancroft, *Shamanism in North America*, p. 37

⁷⁸ “Scripture as Incarnation,” *Historicity and the Latter-day Saint Scriptures*, p. 52, note 13

future are free from it, and there can now be progress toward the future. The rhythm of the past, present and future are put back on course, so that the rhythm continues on without being derailed further from its continuance. To me, this is what the following scripture means:

Then shall they be **gods**, because they have no end; therefore shall they be from everlasting to everlasting, because they **continue**.⁷⁹

They continue, because the rhythm and cycles of time from before birth continues on after death without interruption. They were not permanently sent on some other course, and **the original course was restored** by repentance and the atonement. Thus, they are from everlasting to everlasting.

[Now we consider the symbols of the Big Dipper, which have connections to eternal posterity, the plan of salvation, and exaltation. Note that the footnotes from this point are included in the text rather than being footnotes at the bottom of the page.]

The Dipper and the Celestial Ascent on the Mount

Jack Lyon poetically writes that the Big Dipper on the Salt Lake Temple "points the way to the North Star—the unmoving marker that guides our way home." [The Moroni Code, p. 37] Matthew B. Brown and Paul Thomas Smith write that by "following an imaginary line out from the pointer stars of this constellation" on the Salt Lake Temple, "one can find the North Star" because it is actually "positioned on the temple's tower so that one may actually follow the pointer stars of this stationary symbol" to be able to find the North Star in the sky. [Symbols in Stone, p. 156] Some have interpreted this symbol as a reminder to "follow the way indicated by the priesthood," which is our "unfailing guide" in the "journey of life" to "point the way" and guide us "back to the Father's presence." [Celestial Symbols, p. 148; see also Joseph Fielding McConkie, Gospel Symbolism, p. 130]

This path of the priesthood is tied to what Brigham Young said about the journey back to the Father on this path. After this life, we will "walk back to the presence of the Father, passing the angels who stand as sentinels, being enabled to give

⁷⁹ D&C 132:20

them the key words, the signs and tokens, pertaining to the holy Priesthood, and gain your eternal exaltation in spite of earth and hell." [Discourses of Brigham Young, p. 416] This is an uphill ascent on the Heavenly Mount. The **Heavenly Mount is a critical concept connected with the asterism of the Dipper and the Pole Star.**

When we left the presence of God from pre-existence, we condescended, falling into our mortal state. It was, as some have said, "**downward, yet forward.**" But now our journey home is symbolically an ascent. If you look at a picture of the **Dipper**, you will see that parts of it are much **like a mount on which you ascend.**

A popular writer named Peter Levenda, a New Age writer, is often featured on the radio program Coast to Coast AM with George Noory. Most of his writings have a multitude of problems. But one of his books stands out as having a very attractive theory in it. His book named Stairway to Heaven: Chinese Alchemists, Jewish Kabbalists, and the Art of Spiritual Transformation, is interesting. In the book, he proposed a theory of the ritualistic celestial ascent on the Big Dipper as the metaphorical ascent on God's Mount in Heaven.[Stairway to Heaven: Chinese Alchemists, Jewish Kabbalists, and the Art of Spiritual Transformation, 2008. Levenda's theory of the ancient Polestar Cult was somewhat influential in the formation of my proposal in this book that the polestar was the geocentric representation of the throne of God, being merely symbol of what actually lies in the Galactic Hub. But other ideas that Levenda presents in his books are not very attractive to me, some of them being occultish.] Levenda **ties the Dipper to Jacob's ladder**:[Genesis 28:12-18]

And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it. And, behold, the Lord stood above it... And Jacob awaked out of his sleep, and he said,... [T]his is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven. And Jacob rose up early in the morning, and took the stone that he had put for his pillows, and set it up for a pillar, and poured oil upon the top of it.

So, the Lord showed Jacob that it was the Gate of Heaven, because of this symbol of a ladder with angels ascending and descending on it. Levenda also convincingly ties the Dipper to the Kabbalistic Tree of Life. Essentially the same concept of ascension up the Tree of Life is championed by David Littlefield, where he applies the idea of the Kabbalistic Tree of Life as a symbol or tool leading one on his ascension to heaven.[See Littlefield's book Mormon Mysticism] To Levenda, the seven stars of the Big Dipper are the seven rungs of

the ladder on which it was believed anciently that men would ascend to the Throne of God at the Pole Star. Every step in one's spiritual progress is actually a part of this journey. Joseph Smith stated:

When you climb up a ladder, you must begin at the bottom, and ascend step by step, until you arrive at the top; and so it is with the principles of the gospel—you must begin with the first, and go on until you learn all the principles of exaltation. But it will be a great while after you have passed through the veil before you will have learned them. It is not all to be comprehended in this world; it will be a great work to learn our salvation and exaltation even beyond the grave. [Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, p. 348]

After each stage of the journey one would stop at a node, or station, as it were. In the ancient traditions, at each star in the dipper, the initiate would be met by angelic sentinels or gatekeepers where he would be required to give passwords and formulas to pass on to the next stage. Sometimes the passwords would be the names of the angels.[See [Stairway To Heaven](#), pp. 18-19, for example] The ancient Chinese Foo Dogs or Lions were temple guardians, symbolic of this type of thing. It is not a coincidence that the Sphinx in Giza is the guardian in front of the Egyptian Pyramids. A similar notion is manifest in lions that appear in front of our libraries in western culture. They are the sentinels that stand at the gates. Of course, the temple workers that check temple recommends at the front desk of our temples are after the same pattern. Let us not forget the Masonic Tyler with a sword that stands at the door of the Masonic lodge, or the cherubim with the flaming sword to guard the way of the tree of life. This is precisely what was described by Brigham Young in the meeting of the sentinels when one makes his way back to heaven. For example, Heber C. Kimball states:

Joseph always told us that we would have to pass by sentinels that are placed between us and our Father and God. Then, of course, we are conducted along from this probation to other probations or from one dispensation to another, by those who conducted those dispensations. [Journal of Discourses 6:63]

The head, or prophet, of each dispensation from history, acting as a sentinel, meets us at each stopping place or station along the way, to put us through a "probation," ritually testing our knowledge of signs and tokens at each stage. This progression back to the Father that takes place right before we become exalted is likened to our progression along each estate of our existence, since each stage of our existence such as pre-existence, earth life, etc. is an "estate" or "probation" where we are tested. The seven stars of the dipper, therefore, are symbolic of both

these way-stations, as also, the dispensation heads that stand as sentinels to test us.

And interestingly enough, "**Some scholars believe that the 'seven stars' in Revelation 1:16 refer to the Big Dipper.**" [Matthew B. Brown and Paul Thomas Smith, Symbols In Stone, p. 168, note 134] Levenda also connects the Dipper with the seven stars or seven candlesticks in the Book of Revelation, as well as the "seven spirits" before the throne of God mentioned in Revelation. [Revelation 1:16, 20; 4:1-2,5] Eugene Seaich speaks of the Jewish concept of the "seven-fold" river of fire originating from God's throne "**which flowed down from above to fill the Temple, and which finally emerged as the seven objects in the Holy of Holies.**" [A Great Mystery: The Secret of the Jerusalem Temple, The Embracing Cherubim and At-One-Ment with the Divine, p. 55-56] This was a symbol of the Dipper.

Levenda also makes a connection between the Dipper and the Egyptian Opening of the Mouth Ceremony. In the beliefs of the Egyptians, this **ritual enabled the dead person to** "see, smell, breathe, hear, and eat," to be able to eat the offerings brought to them. And it is assumed that this ritual was a "**clearing of a baby's mouth at birth.**" [<http://www.touregypt.net/featurestories/open.htm>] Levenda quotes Budge, an Egyptologist, who says that the ritual would allow the mummy "**to open the nostrils, and to breathe, eat, drink, think, and walk.**" Levenda notes that the **Egyptian priests would use an iron implement that was in the shape of the Big Dipper.** [Stairway To Heaven, pp. 16-17]

The LDS scholar Avraham Gileadi connected the **Egyptian Opening of the Mouth ceremony to the account of what happened to the prophet Isaiah** in Chapter 6 of the Book of Isaiah. In this vision, he saw the Lord "sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple." This was the temple in heaven. And the angels, called "seraphim" were there. And one of the angels had "a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged." [(Isaiah 6:1-10, emphasis added).] This is all an analog to LDS initiatory rites. [Hugh Nibley also made this association in Message of the Joseph Smith Papyri: An Egyptian Endowment.] And it is archaeo-astronomically linked, once again. The five planets known from antiquity are associated with the five elements to the Chinese and Indians, being earth, fire, wind, water and wood. But also, these elements are associated with the five senses, which are hearing, touch, sight, taste and smell. [See Joseph Campbell, Primitive Mythology: The Masks of God, p. 452).]

Moving on, it is clear that the **north** the Book of Job as quoted above, [in Job 26:7] is a symbol that represents the place of his **throne**, as it does in Isaiah chapter 14, where Lucifer boasted in the pre-existence of his delusional desire to ascend above his brethren on the Heavenly Mount and raise himself above everyone else:

For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. [Isaiah 14:13-14, emphasis added]

This was Mount Zion, the Heavenly Mount. Indeed, we read that according to William F. Albright, as reported by one writer, that both the Big Dipper and the Polestar "represent the unwearying circumpolar stars of God in Isaiah,[Isaiah 14:13] and they symbolize eternity there in the Bible, as well as in ancient Egypt and Phoenicia." [<http://www.earthsky.org/skywatching/51129/kochab-and-pherkab-in-the-little-dipper>] Similarly, Ezekiel likens the King of Tyrus to the pre-existent Lucifer:

Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. **Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God;** every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, **till iniquity was found in thee.** By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: **and I will destroy thee,** O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. [Ezekiel 28:12-16]

The **stones of fire** are clearly the stars as if they are the rungs of a ladder. Lucifer was a cherub, or angel. He **ascended and descended in the midst of the stones of fire, going freely, until he was flung to the earth.** He was **in the mountain of God, the asterism of the Dipper and the North Star, but more literally, in the mountain of God where the Governing Planets reside, inside**

a great celestial cocoon. This is strong evidence that these interpretations of these symbols are correct.

While it is true that in some geocentric cosmologies, there was the idea of celestial spheres as the seven heavens, concentric circles rising above the earth, just rising through these spheres in the firmament is not the precise notion of ascension. **Something had truly "ascended" to be near God's throne when it was among the "imperishable stars" of the North**, ascending towards the throne northward. Levenda writes that **those stars "do not descend below the horizon and hence do not 'perish,' but revolve endlessly in the night sky."** [Stairway to Heaven p. 14] The concept among the Egyptians was that their **dead kings would "reside in the northern sky as a star among the other Imperishable Stars that revolve around the Pole Star."** [ibid., p. 15] Yet, for Lucifer, things turned out differently, when he was cast out of heaven. Isaiah describes this using archaeo-astronomical metaphors:

Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell [i.e. to the Duat, below the horizon], to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms;... But **thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch**, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the **pit**; as a carcass trodden under feet. [Isaiah 14:15, 19]

Lucifer, or Venus, the son of the morning, was doomed to wander in the Duat, or Underworld. He was thrust down to hell, **just like Cain, and became a vagabond.** The phrase "sides of the pit" where Venus is brightest signifies its manifestations as the morning and the evening star, or in other words, it is at its brightest when it is right above the horizon at sunset and sunrise. This is because it is tied to the Sun, being closer to the sun in its orbit than the earth. [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lucifer] So, **from an earthly vantage point, Venus does not "ascend," very high like other "stars," but is relegated mostly to the "sides of the pit," above the horizon.**

Now we go back to the idea of the North in the Geocentric Heaven, as being the part of the sky near to the throne of God. The Hebrew word for North, which is tsaphon, meaning "hidden," or "dark" or "the north" in the sense of "gloomy or unknown." The root from which that word tsaphon is taken means "to hide (by covering over)," or to "to hoard in reserve" or "to protect." Immediately, we see the connection with the Book of Job again, where it says: "He holdeth back the face of his throne, and spreadeth his cloud upon it," [Job 26:8] because he is covering or protecting it, hiding it from view. And also, tsaphon can mean

"boreal." Boras, in Greek mythology was the personification of the north wind. Another connection exists between the name tsaphon and the Greek character Typhon, a monster associated with the north winds, and a hundred serpents issuing from his thighs. Typhon has been associated with the Egyptian god Set. And his name is where we get the word Typhoon, again connecting it with the idea of the winds.

Bebon, or Bebys is a mythological creature that stands for the Constellation Ursa Major or Great Bear in the Zodiac of Denderah from Egypt. Typhon is tied to Bebon or Bebys. Remember, in Isaiah 14, we encountered the phrase "sides of the north," as well as in the other scriptures. The word sides is yarkethe. This is "feminine of yarekh," meaning "the flank; but used only figuratively, the rear or recess." [In Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, this is Hebrew word 3411. See also 3409.] So this could also be translated as "far north" or "recesses of the north." Here, yarek means "thigh" or "**generative** parts."

To the Egyptians and other cultures, the Big Dipper, or Ursa Major, was known as the "thigh" or Bull's Thigh. In Egypt, the crocodile-god Sobek is said to have come from the leg or thigh of the "Great One," Uret, a constellation linked with Thueris, the Bull's Thigh, or in other words, the Big Dipper. The thigh constellation in Egypt was also considered a piece of Set's dismembered body. Remember, the Egyptian Set or Seth was identified with Typhon, so this is the clincher that there is a connection between Ursa Major and Typhon. In Greek, the word arktos (bear) refers to Ursa Major, or the Big Dipper. Of course, the Indo-European arktos (bear/north) and the Semitic yarek (side/thigh) are very similar phonetically. Furthermore, the word arctic in English is tied to the Greek word arktos, as well as the Latin word ursus, because they all come from the Indo-European root meaning "bear," which is *rtko. [<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bear>]

The Greek mythology behind this word also ties in with Artemis, the moon goddess. Yerach means a "lunation" or "month." [Omni 1:21] To the Canaanites, Oreach (Olea) or Yarikh was the moon god, also having the connotation of "wanderer" or "traveler." We see this in the name for the Egyptian moon-god Khonsu, with the same meaning. Oreach is also used in Abraham 3:13. Note the transposition of the L and the R in the word Olea from the Book of Abraham, and in the Semitic Oreach/Yareakh. This is similar to how the Semitic QRB means "to be near," but in the Book of Abraham, "near" is KLB (Kolob), [Abraham 3:3] yet it shows the relation in the Semitic roots, and transposes them.

Curiously, John Gee of BYU has shown that **the Four Sons of Horus were linked with the North Star**. The ancient Egyptian word for thigh is khepesh and is used to denote the Dipper in ancient Egypt. Gee's master's thesis was on how

the Four Sons of Horus were the four stars of the "bowl" of the Big Dipper. This is another interpretation of the Four Sons of Horus besides the Four Watchers. The Four Sons would crank the celestial wheel of the universe, and this action would allow the dead Egyptian king to ascend and be reborn. There is an intimate connection here between the Stairway or Ladder, the Grand Heavenly Pillar, and what is known in Egypt as the Djed Pillar or Column.



The Djed Column has multiple interpretations. Some are Osiris' backbone and a Cedar Tree (again the tree motif). Indeed, it is curious that E. Douglas Clark ties Abraham with the symbol of a cedar.[Astronomy, Papyrus And Covenant, chapter 3] Of course, it is in the myth of Osiris where Osiris in his sarcophagus morphed because it was enclosed into a tamarisk tree, which was subsequently set up as a pillar in the palace of the gods. [Primitive Mythology: The Masks of God, pp.424-425] In the geocentric description of the North Star as the nail in the sure place in Isaiah 22, in Hebrew the word sure here is aman, which is a root meaning to build up, or to support, that which is sure or faithful as an adjective, and the term omenah is a column or pillar. And not surprisingly, amanah, from the same root is "covenant," or "something fixed." And of course, Christ is the Amen, the true and faithful witness. [Revelation 3:14] Once again, it is the central pillar, the Nail of Heaven. But in the center of the hypocephalus of Facsimile #2, Nibley tells us it is Amun/Ammon, in his aspect as the creator god Khnum. Again, all things have their likeness.

The bone is the symbol of regeneration and renewal to the Native Americans, just as Osiris and his backbone are symbols of resurrection and renewal to the Egyptians. As Joseph Campbell describes from Shamanic myth, it is a "particle of bone" that makes possible the "dead man's return to life... just as he had been before" so that he doesn't degenerate into some other form. The bone "does not disintegrate into something else, but is the undestroyed base from which the same individual... becomes magically reconstructed, to pick up life where he left it." [Primitive Mythology: The Masks of God, p. 291]

In Facsimile #1 in the Book of Abraham, Abraham himself is on the Lion Couch, but the Egyptological interpretation of the figure of Abraham is Osiris. So Osiris

stands for Abraham, or is a substitution, or proxy or surrogate. In ancient Egypt, the Djed was the symbol of enduring, stability and regenerative power in ancient Egypt. Faulkner interprets it as resembling a tree trunk with cut-off branches. But what is really amazing is how it resembles some kind of ladder, or perhaps a stairway.

In some ancient illustrations, the Osiris-Djed has two serpents coming out from underneath him. Serpents are connected to the ecliptic, and the word for serpent is djed-ft, obviously connected to Djed. So as you can see, there is a connection between the Caduceus, the symbol of modern medicine, and the djed symbol of the ancient Egyptians. The common elements of the two symbols are the serpents facing one another, as well as the rod or pillar in the middle. The djed was, as it were, a tree that links the earth and stars. Here is a representation of the **Caduceus**:



Malachi calls Christ the **Son of Righteousness with healing in his wings**. [Malachi 4:2] And, of course, Moses lifted the serpent on the pole in the wilderness.[Alma 33:19; Numbers 21:9] Now, compare this also with ancient Chinese symbols including Fu Xi and Nu Kua, a pair of Chinese deities, which were depicted as if their lower bodies were two intertwined serpents, just like the Caduceus. Clearly, the fact that it is the lower bodies being entwined is very suggestive of procreative activity. Also, notice how one is holding a compass, and the other a square:

This same thing was found in ancient India. They called their serpent like dragons "naga."

Campbell writes that the "well known serpent-daemon (naga) motif that plays such a conspicuous role in... Indian religion... evolved—no doubt from the primitive theme of the monster-serpent of the abyss." And then he reminds us of the grand cosmic serpent in the cosmic waters of the sea of milk. [Primitive Mythology: The Masks of God, p. 435-436] Not only does this return us to Typhon and is thigh, but also to Leviathan, who was the grand nemesis of Yahweh (Jehovah) in the myth referred to in Job and Isaiah:

In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. [Isaiah 27:1]

This is not the sea, but the sea of milk, the cosmic sea. "Canst thou draw out leviathan with an hook? or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down? Canst thou put an hook into his nose? or bore his jaw through with a thorn?" [Job 41:1-2] This is the constellation draco, that captured the third of the stars of heaven in his tail. [Revelations 12:3-4] And he battles eternally with Ursa Major, the Great Bear or Bull constellation in the heavens, and wounds his thigh, as the one constellation is right next to the other. Yahweh is Ursa Major in the Hebrew myth.

(Note: The leviathan scriptures can also have a literal physical/temporal fulfillment in literally a large sea monster on Earth's oceans. Dual meaning is typical of scripture – physical things made to represent / reenact larger scale / past / future things. End note.)



The **nagas of India** in the fashion above not only form a symbol that looks like the "**infinity**" symbol that we are used to in our culture. But this is also the exact fashion of the so-called "love knot," otherwise known as the "**wedding knot**," "**reef knot**" or, in Roman Lore, the "**Hercules knot**," symbolizing the legendary fertility of Hercules. "**Handfasting**" was the fastening of the hands in a knot with rope or something else **like a strip of cloth or a ribbon in marriage ceremonies in medieval times is associated with the Hercules knot. Eastern Orthodox churches still do this** in marriage ceremonies. There is a clear association with **intertwining and knots in the tradition of handfasting.**

The nagas were considered alchemical **symbols of transformation from lower to higher levels**, or the **link between the earth and the heavens**. It has become clear from all of this evidence that that the **intertwining curves of the snakes** in the Caduceus is the **analog to the ribs in the rib cage**. The Hebrew word **pathil**

means twine, and pathal means to twine or to struggle, which brings to mind the wrestle with God that Jacob had. Pethen means to twist. Shazar means to twist. Shor means an umbilical, or a string as twisted. Indeed, this word pathal, similar to the word pethen, meaning asp, is used in the book of Genesis to mean a struggle or a wrestle: "And Rachel said, With great wrestlings have I wrestled with my sister, and I have prevailed: and she called his name **Naphtali**." [Genesis 30:8] The name Naphtali is from that word.

Also, in India, we encounter the Vedic god Aja Ekapad, symbolizing the Sun and the Day Star. The name of this god has two parts: Aja, meaning alternately "goat," or "unborn," and Ekapad, meaning uniped, or one-footed (Eka, meaning one, and pad, meaning foot). He is called the "supporter of the sky." Furthermore:

He combines in himself the associations that go with the sacrificial pole, Indra's spear, the axis of the world, the creation of the universe, and the double-meaning of the word aja as the unborn source of the world and a sacrificial animal... This is reminiscent of Indra's spear propping up heaven... and it points to a further association of the image with the axis mundi which goes right through the whole creation as a connecting route between heaven and earth... [Werner, Karel, A Popular Dictionary of Hinduism, p. 26]

Some traditions maintain Aja Ekapad is a snake (the serpent of the deep) rather than a goat, and thus a uniped, in the form of a naga. He is "unborn," or in other words, "uncreated," being a symbol of chaotic matter without order. Although, not received with very much applause or consideration, H. Brunnhofer associated the goat uniped with the polestar.

Whatever the case, one observation is that, "Instead of being the polar star, the one-legged billy-goat might be a neighboring constellation, and consequently nearly stationary." [Dumezil, Georges, Les Dieux des Germains, pp. 147-148]

So clearly, it is the opinion of some that there is something circum-polar going on here, at the very least, and that the uniped idea is linked to the axis mundi, because of its stationary nature, being an omphalos. From a strictly Hindu interpretation, it is hard to link Aja Ekapad to the polestar directly. But in conjunction with Chinese data, and from other parts of the world also, the connection becomes much clearer.

In the case of the mythical deities Nu Kua and her husband/brother Fu Xi, a pair of uniped Chinese gods, it is the sacred embrace lawfully between husband and

wife, the Hieros Gamos, or sacred marriage, described by Eugene Seaich in his masterful volume, *A Great Mystery*. Levenda describes the Hieros Gamos as taking place on the top of Babylonian Ziggurats, after the participants had ascended thereto. [Stairway To Heaven, p. 25] It is the symbol of the welding of the generations, the turning of the hearts of the children to the fathers and vice versa. Eugene Seaich comments on the Astana veil which depicts Fu Xi and Nu Kua. He says that these two characters "represented the **Cosmic Mountain that supports the sky**" and that they were also associated very closely "with the Great Bear [i.e. the Dipper]" as it rotates around the pole star. He notes that these two characters are, most of the time "shown resting upon a single foot, or tail," and mentions that this is probably the reason that "**a limping dance** has been an important part of their worship, designed, as it would seem, to produce thunder and rain." He calls Fu Xi "best known of all these 'unipeds.'" He says that from about 2000 years ago, these two have "**intertwining tails, depicting a creative embrace**," linking them to the idea of the "Indian nagakals (intertwining serpent deities), whose own form was derived from the Sumero-Babylonian caduceus." [A Great Mystery: The Secret Of The Jerusalem Temple, The Embracing Cherubim and At-One-Ment with the Divine, p. 381]

Fu Xi and Nu Kua were husband and wife, but also brother and sister, precisely as Osiris and Isis in Egypt. They were to China what Adam and Eve is to the Judeo-Christian tradition, the first man and first woman.

It is, of course, no coincidence that we are told that Jacob "**halted upon his thigh**." [Genesis 32:21] You see, **to halt is to limp**. And, as we have already observed, of course, **the thigh is the Dipper**, once again. Levenda describes the Limping Dance as the Chinese "Pace of Yu," **a circumambulation, and that it is identified with the "seven stars of the Dipper."** He describes it as what happens when one tries to go "**in a straight line with a limp or with one leg shorter than the other**," and naturally one's path "**becomes a circle**, describing a circumference around a central point." And then he astutely observes that it is the **very same thing that the "stars of the Dipper do around the Pole Star..."** And then he ties that to the Egyptian idea of the "Thigh of Set" where anyone or any animal that is "wounded in one leg or deprived of one leg, would limp." [Stairway To Heaven, p. 123]

The grand **archetype for the myth of the wounded leg comes from the Messiah** himself. "**And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel**." [Genesis 3:15] It is Satan, the serpent, who succeeds in wounding the Savior in his crucifixion, yet, in the end, Satan shall be crushed. Indeed, in the in

the Targum Onkelos, it contains a commentary on this verse, known as the "The Heels (or footsteps) of the Messiah," saying "He will remember what you did to him in the beginning, and you shall be observing him in the end," referring to a round course, the eternal round.

[<http://mahood.wordpress.com/category/nearmiddle-east-mythology/biblical-mythology/>] **Joseph Smith, interestingly enough, is another incarnation of this same archetype.** Joseph Smith, when he was very young, had typhoid fever. And though he got over it, it appears that his body was weakened and susceptible to infection, perhaps. Whatever the case, an infection worked its way into his leg, and it had to be operated on. Several parts of the bone removed, without anesthetic. This left him somewhat lame afterward for many years. Reportedly he **walked with somewhat of a limp into his later life.** [Lucy Mack Smith, *The History of Joseph Smith, by his Mother*, p. 59-61, 65; Shanna Butler, "Playing Joseph Smith," *New Era*, November 2005, p. 24] He is the ritual embodiment of the wounded leg theme, and the Lord actually played out that ritual theme in history, a concept we have spoken of elsewhere.

The translation in the targum is actually exegetical. Head is rosh, or "the beginning," as in beresheit, the first word in the first verse of the Bible.[Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, 7218] Heel is eqeb or aqeb, which also figuratively means "the last of anything," or the "result," but it is also the "track" on which one treads or the "step" one takes. [Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, 6118, 8119] Thus, the Savior himself **treads the course of the wounded "thigh," until he overcomes all things.** This is the **oroboros, the two serpents eating one another's tails in an eternal dance.** The Savior is the Beginning and the End, the Alpha and the Omega, the Alfa and the Tav, the Alpha being the Bull, and the Tav, or Tau, or Taurus, being the Bull, the two Bulls. Khonsu is **the beginning and the ending for the Egyptians, and is the manifestation of the two Bulls.** In Nordic mythology, Iormungand is the World Serpent who lies in the sea surrounding Midgard, her tail gripped in her own mouth. **Thor, after crushing the head of the serpent,** was overwhelmed by the serpent's venom, yet he was able to take nine steps backwards before dying.

The scriptures say: "**And Abraham said unto his eldest servant of his house, that ruled over all that he had, Put, I pray thee, thy hand under my thigh.**"[Genesis 24:2] The translation of this verse in the **Joseph Smith Translation translates "thigh" as "hand," or, literally, handclasp.** It wasn't a mistranslation. It was Joseph Smith's exegetical translation of the word thigh, because **both translations are correct,** both from Joseph Smith and from the King James Version. As we saw, Isaiah 22:23 is geocentrically tied to the North Star. In that verse, the term "fasten him" (the verb taqa) is "to drive (a nail or tent-pin, a

dart, etc.)" or "to become bondsman (by handclasping)."[Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, number 8628] For it is the Dipper, or Thigh, that circumambulates around the North Star in the circum-polar region. We read that the "hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him." [Genesis 32:25] The "out of joint" phrase, or yaqa is figuratively "to impale." [Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, number 3363] And it sure sounds similar to the word taqa, as they rhyme. We can discern here that the symbol of the Dipper is intimately tied with handclasps, as is the North Star, as the Dipper. Dipper, or Thigh, is the substitution for handclasp, because of the ritualistic connections between the two. It is not quite a metonymy, but comes close. It is a struggle to describe this. There isn't a precise word for this type of ritual substitution in this case, but it is a metaphorical substitution. A good example in the scriptures of a substitution such as this that is more commonly known is Zion as a symbol of Jerusalem. Zion has since come to take on additional meanings over time, including the New Jerusalem and Nauvoo, and even Salt Lake City or Utah. But early on, it was synonymous with Jerusalem, because it was the name of a mountain (Mount Zion) there in Jerusalem, so in this case, it is more of a synecdoche, or metonym.

The Hebrew word abaq means to wrestle, or to embrace, Of course, the word-play with this one and the word "heel" is immediately apparent, as heel is aqeb. This is an instance of phonetic reversal. Hugh Nibley discussed the very "puzzling episode" from the scriptures about Jacob wrestling with God. He points out that the word "conventionally translated by 'wrestled' (ye'aveq) can just as well mean 'embrace,'" and it was in the "ritual embrace that Jacob received a new name and the bestowal of priestly and kingly power at sunrise..." And he links it to the "Egyptian coronation embrace..." [Message of the Joseph Smith Papyri, 2nd Edition, p. 434] But as a noun, abaq means dust, just as in the creation of Adam, Adam is created from dust in the sacred embrace of Hieros Gamos.

Hollow is kaph, "the hollow hand or palm (so of the paw of an animal, of the sole, and even of the bowl of a dish or sling, the handle of a bolt, the leaves of a palm-tree." And even, figuratively, "power." [Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, 3709] Anciently, palm trees were symbols of overcoming or prevailing, bringing to mind the Savior's triumphant entry into Jerusalem. From the Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, mention is made of the so-called "Lion's Paw" used in that fraternity. They say that it is a "mode of recognition so called because of the rude resemblance made by the hand and fingers to the lion's paw. It refers to the Lion of the Tribe of Judah." [Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, by Albert Gallatin Mackey, Robert Ingham Clegg, Harry LeRoy Haywood, p. 596] And they point out that there are two scriptures that this idea is partly derived from in the Bible. Firstly, in the scriptures, we see this:

David said moreover, The Lord that delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, he will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine. And Saul said unto David, Go, and the Lord be with thee. [1 Samuel 17:37]

And then, secondly, in Revelation:

And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. [Revelations 5:5]

And once again, back to Jacob's "wrestling," we notice that it was Jacob that prevailed when he was crowned with power in the "wrestling" with the "angel." Of course, in David's prophecy of the words of Christ on the cross, we read:

My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? [Psalm 22:1]

Christ is the Millennial Davidic King:

Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne...[Acts 2:29-30]

So David (at least during the righteous part of his life) was a type of Jesus Christ. From the Ethiopic Enoch 24:3-6;25:1-6, we see all of these archaeo-astronomical connections once again. Ethiopic Enoch mentions the "seventh mountain" in the vision. It resembled "the seat of a throne..." This once again takes us back to Facsimile #2 in the Book of Abraham, where the central figure, identified by Joseph Smith as "Kolob" is a mirror-image seated figure that resembles a mountain. It is a god on a throne, namely Khnum-Ra or Amen-Ra, the ram-headed god of creation. And around this mountain or throne, "fragrant trees encircled" it. There is the **circumambulation**, around an omphalos. Now we get to the meat where the djed column or tree comes in. Because among these trees, there was "a tree such as I had never yet smelt, neither was any amongst them nor were others like it..." Just as with Lehi's tree of life, "its fruit is beautiful," yet its "fruit resembles the dates of a palm." Then Enoch inquires of the angels about the tree, and about the other things in the vision such as the mountain. Michael the archangel explains that the summit of the mountain "whose summit is like the throne of God, is His throne..." Then Enoch is told that the tree will be moved to the "holy place, to the temple of the Lord," showing the link to the trees in Eden,

but also to the "seven objects in the Holy of Holies" spoken of previously by Eugene Seach. Then after this, a poem is recited to Enoch, where it says that the faithful will enter "into the holy place..." The tree's "fragrance shall be in their bones, and they shall live a long life on earth..." This is another link to the djed pillar again, not only because of the tree, but because of the ankh-djed-was formula that we can discern here. It is the "ankh" (life) symbol, the "djed" (backbone) column symbol, and the "was" (authority) symbol, that occur together sometimes in Egyptian formulas. Cottle says that this formula refers to the blessing of "having all power, all life, and all stability." [Thomas D. Cottle, The Papyri of Abraham: Facsimiles of the Everlasting Covenant, p. 103] Similarly, in the Egyptian in Facsimile #2 of the Book of Abraham, in figure 8, the text refers to a plea from the Osiris Sheshonq that the God of the Universe grant to him life, represented by the ankh symbol. Since the ank-djed-was is directly connected to the mysteries of godliness, it is only natural that Joseph Smith wrote that figure 8 of the hypocephalus "Contains writings that cannot be revealed unto the world; but is to be had in the Holy Temple of God." There also seems to be a connection between this formula and the Three Immortals of China. Many Asian businesses seem to display the statuettes of three immortals. They symbolize, once again, all good gifts: happiness, prosperity and longevity.

The Light of Christ in One's Countenance and Priesthood Power

Referring to this idea, Parley P. Pratt wrote:

An intelligent being, in the image of God, possesses every organ, attribute, sense, sympathy, [and] affection... possessed by God himself... The gift of the Holy Spirit adapts itself to all these organs or attributes... It inspires, develops and matures... our nature... It strengthens, invigorates and gives tone to the nerves. In short, it is, as it were, marrow to the bone, joy to the heart, light to the eyes, music to the ears, and life to the whole being.

In the presence of such persons one feels to enjoy the light of their countenances, as the genial rays of a sunbeam. [Key to the Science of Theology, pp.101-102]

Indeed, as one of our hymns states, "Truth reflects upon our senses; Gospel light reveals to some." [Hymn 273] Or, as stated another way in the Doctrine and Covenants:

For whoso is faithful unto the obtaining these two priesthoods of which I have spoken, and the magnifying their calling, are sanctified by the Spirit unto **the renewing of their bodies**. [D&C 84: 33]

Another instance in the scriptures of the ank-djed-was formula is in Proverbs, followed up with the theme of renewal and the promise of increase:

Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the Lord, and depart from evil. It shall **be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones**. Honour the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine. [Proverbs 3:7-10]

Some scholars have noted a connection between Egyptian writings and the Proverbs, such as the fact that Proverbs 22:17-24 has a direct connection to the Instructions of Amenhotep. It should come as no surprise that the ank-djed-was formula also appears in Hebrew literature. This is clearly a blessing of the priesthood since it is linked to the oath and covenant of the priesthood in D&C 84. Similarly, the connection to the wording in the Word of Wisdom in the Doctrine and Covenants is immediately apparent, as that is the Lord's law of health.

Spiritual Darkness in One's Countenance and Priesthood Curses

These promises of increase and renewal and health are in stark contrast to the promised destruction and lack of prosperity promised to the servants of Satan, who follow after the pattern of Cain. Just like Cain was promised that the earth would not yield her strength, to these people, the promise is that...

their hope shall be blasted, and their prospects shall melt away as the hoar frost melteth before the burning rays of the rising sun... That they may be disappointed also, and their hopes may be cut off... they shall be severed from the ordinances of mine house. Their basket shall not be full, their houses and their barns shall perish, and they themselves shall be despised by those that flattered them. They shall not have right to the

priesthood, nor their posterity after them from generation to generation.
[D&C 121:11-21]

Here, a priesthood curse is pronounced, that would be exacted on both the offender as well as his posterity, that they would be severed from the ordinances of the Temple and not have the right to priesthood. At one point Orson Hyde had apostatized, but then he later repented:

I was on my return from Richmond,... and on the wide prairie I saw a man walking behind me. I reined in the team to let him overtake me, and who should it be but Orson Hyde, who had apostatized in the fuss, but had seen a vision in which it was made known to him that if he did not make immediate restitution to the Quorum of the Twelve, he would be cut off and all his posterity, and that the curse of Cain would be upon him... I saw that Brother Hyde was on the stool of repentance, and he did repent good and got back to his place in the Twelve. [Journal of Hosea Stout]

So, the Curse of Cain is not a mythological, nonsensical priesthood curse that comes upon people of a certain race as in the folklore versions of the doctrine. Actually, in a scriptural understanding of real priesthood curses, there is actual logic and reasoning. A curse comes upon the unrighteous and the effects are felt upon their posterity because of their own rebelliousness, and, while their posterity is affected adversely, it is not like somehow they are cursed with something that cannot be overcome. Their posterity is only "cursed" with the curse so long as they do not turn back to the Lord. The darkness that comes upon people is manifest as a lack of the light of the Spirit in their eyes. Their countenance no longer shines. [Alma 5:14; 3 Nephi 13:22-23] The sins are upon the heads of the parents, not upon the children. [2 Nephi 4:6; Moses 6:54; D&C 68:25] It is only consequence of sin from the parents that is suffered by the posterity. When the posterity turns to righteousness when they are reclaimed, then the blessings return to the family line. The blessings of the righteous flow unto them in a natural way as a natural course of events because the justice of God naturally causes blessings to flow:

The Holy Ghost shall be thy constant companion, and thy scepter an unchanging scepter of righteousness and truth; and thy dominion shall be an everlasting dominion, and without compulsory means it shall flow unto thee forever and ever. [D&C 121:46]

The term "sons of perdition" in the classic sense means those who blaspheme against the Holy Ghost. These are they who altogether turn away from the Priesthood Covenant:

Therefore, all those who receive the priesthood, receive this oath and covenant of my Father, which he cannot break, neither can it be moved. But whoso breaketh this covenant after he hath received it, and altogether turneth therefrom, shall not have forgiveness of sins in this world nor in the world to come. [D&C 84:40-41]

It is true that a regular apostate isn't necessarily a son of perdition (in the usual way the phrase is understood), if he did not have a great amount of light to turn away from. But still, the Curse of Cain is what comes upon all apostates, whether they have denied the Holy Ghost or not. It is the same curse and spirit upon him (but to a lesser degree). He has still turned away from whatever amount of light he had, and is now in darkness. He has still broken the covenants he made, and becomes "**posterity of Satan**" even if in the end he will be redeemed to some state of glory. [Alma 24:30]

(Note: We don't have all the meanings of these things, but it is certain that a fallen countenance and cessation of priesthood is at the heart of the curse of Cain. End note.)

More on Jacob's Wrestling

Now, we go back to our discussion on Jacob's "**wrestling**." The "**halting**" or tsela in Hebrew is to "**limp**," or the act of **circumambulation** as a verb, but as a noun, it is also the **rib**, from whence Eve was taken, for it is that very word in that is used in the Genesis account of Eve's creation. It is the Djed, the Rib, the Dust, the product of the Heiros Gamos, or sacred embrace. The Rib or tsela is the "side," just as the yarek is the side. The Hebrew word for "thigh" in this case is yarek, which is closely related to the word tsela, not by the sound of the word, but by the meaning and the connections we have shown previously, showing the generative connection here. Again for further elaboration on this theme, I refer you to the chapter on Adam's creation.

"Shrank," in the account of Jacob's wrestling is Nasheh, meaning rheumatic or **crippled**, from the root Nashah, meaning to forget or to neglect, but another form of the root means to lend or borrow. Now, an almost identical related term is Nashak, which is a root meaning to strike, or to oppress with taxation or usury.

Neshek is interest that you pay, so this is intimately tied with Nasheh. But the clincher is the root Nasaq, to catch fire, or Nesheq, to fasten up, to kiss, or, figuratively, to touch.

All the brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with an holy kiss. The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand. [1 Corinthians 16:20-21]

All of these meanings are related to the meanings of paqa or taqa, to fasten, to strike, etc. The word use is an intentional word-play. The use of the meaning crippled or shrank once again ties again with the circumambulation of the so-called "unipeds."

Seven days shalt thou keep a solemn feast unto the Lord thy God in the place which the Lord shall choose: because the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thine increase, and in all the works of thine hands, therefore thou shalt surely rejoice. [Deuteronomy 26:25]

The solemn feast here in this scripture is chagag, "to move in a circle, i.e. to march in sacred procession, to observe a festival." [Strongs Exhaustive Concordance, 2287]

Let them praise his name in the dance: let them sing praises unto him with the timbrel and harp. [Psalm 149:3]

Dance here is machowl, "a round dance" from chuwl, "to twist or whirl (in circular or spiral manner)" or "to dance." Note that they are "praising his name" in the dance or circle. Nibley writes that "Lucian's famous essay on the ancient dance" is related to the "round dance in the temple," which Nibley relates to the ancient Christian prayer circle. And he says that some "referred to this as a dance; it is definitely a chorus." [Temple and Cosmos, p. 22]

The Hopi and other Indian tribes have the ancient symbol of the Nakwach spiral, which is the curled sprouting bean. It symbolizes life, rebirth, and brotherhood, and also the destination of a long journey. It is also a Hopi handclasp to be done during a special dance during the ceremony called the Wuwuchim, something, incidentally, that fascinated Hugh Nibley as well. It marks the start of the year, and young men are ceremonially initiated into societies. Here are some representations of the Nakwach symbol:



One cannot help but to notice these spiral patterns all over nature, such as in the swirling pattern manifested in the spiral arms of a galaxy. And so now, we come full circle. Nibley tells us that in the Dead Sea Scrolls, in the document called the "Manual of Discipline," the "singer promises to gauge all his doings and mark the course of his ring-dance to the music of the spheres with the plumb-bob and line." And, back to Nu Kua and Fu Xi, found on the "Astana veil" which Eugene Seach spoke of. Nibley mentions that the veil on which they were drawn is "dominated by the Great Bear, indicating the center of the universe, the omphalos or umbilicus mundi, the navel of the cosmos." And therefore, the "square, compass, and Pole-star designate the veil as the cosmic gate, curtain, or barrier to worlds beyond." [The Early Christian Prayer Circle, <http://farms.byu.edu/publications/transcripts/?id=59>, emphasis added.]

[End of Edwin Goble essay.]

Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 2: The Garden of Eden (& Pre-Flood Conditions) – Highlights & Commentary

<https://youtu.be/1q2oAQ7Rts8>

2 Peter 3:5 says people are dumb on purpose when it comes to God speaking the creation.

The King James version says "the first day," other versions have changed it to "one first day" or "a first day" to downplay the creation and to suggest the Gap Theory of billions of years between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2. Several Bibles now talk about the creation days as periods of time rather than days.

Hovind speculates about Lucifer's fall from heaven.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: Latter-day Saints teach about a pre-earth life where we all existed as spirits before coming to Earth to get bodies, and that Lucifer fell in the spirit world before Adam came here. Several Bible passages

allude to a pre-existent state. Consider:

Jeremiah 1 says, "Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart." *Isaiah 49* says, "The Lord called me before my birth; from within the womb he called me by name."

Psalms 139 says, "every day of my life was recorded in your book" even before they existed.

See also *Galatians 1* and *Romans 8* of people being chosen by God before coming to Earth. End note.

Plants are not alive in the Biblical sense. Here, Hovind speculates about generations of plant regeneration before the fall of Adam when death was introduced to the world, and this makes sense because Adam ate the fruit of the garden before falling.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: I believe plant kind didn't reproduce or die before the fall. Adam & Eve's eating of the fruit brought on the fall to all of creation. In The Book of Mormon, 2 Ne. 2:22 emphatically states that "all" things must have remained in the state after which they were created were it not for the fall of Adam. It reads: "...all things which were created must have remained in the same state in which they were after they were created, and they must have remained forever, and had no end. 23 And they would have had no children; ..." End note.

God told Adam to replenish the Earth but the 1611 Bible King James version using a 1611 dictionary the word **replenish just means fill it up, it doesn't mean fill it again**, only the modern meaning means that, so there weren't people before Adam.

Evolution requires death before sin, which is a heresy.

If Noah's flood was small and local, why would God have told Noah to build a large ark to stay in for a year and put all the animals in it? **If it was local, he could've just told Noah to move!**

Note: Here are some more points against a local flood:

-If the flood was local, other local floods would violate God's covenant to not flood the Earth again.

-God wouldn't have to establish the covenant with Noah if Noah wasn't the only person left.

-A local flood wouldn't have wiped out all wickedness from Earth.

-The Bible says all life on Earth died. Also, why would Noah have to bring all the animals if it were a local flood?

-Why would hundreds of world legends talk about a flood covering the whole

Earth? End note.

Hovind says the two scriptures in the Bible, about 1,000 years to man and a day to God, are just general references to how God doesn't use time in heaven and that these verses do not refer to creation. Hebrew scriptures clearly teach a creation of 6 24-hour days.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: There are other references in latter-day saint restoration scriptures that could indicate a 7000-year creation, which is my preferred theory. During those 7000 years of creation, there may have been more being created than just our earth, perhaps the entire galaxy. Protestants typically view the creation of all of space in six days, but latter-day saints view the creation as ongoing. Restoration scriptures (particularly The Pearl of Great Price and Doctrine & Covenants) give additional insight, which makes a very real possibility that each day of creation is 1,000 years. (See (JST 2 Peter 3:8; Facs. 2 Fig. 1; Abr. 3:6-11). Of course, it's not millions of years, and Hovind points this out, too. Neither scriptural interpretation allows for millions of years. We also replicate this with a 6-day work week followed by one day of rest. End note.

The sun wasn't until Creation Day 4, and if the days of creation are literal 24-hour periods, it's easy to have the plants before the sun as it's just a day later, but if there are millions of years in the days, those plants will die without the sunlight.

Note: There is a possibility for the 1000-year days, even in this instance, of the plants needing sunlight if God provided the light another way. This could be similar to how it is written in the Book of Revelation that in the celestial Earth, the sun won't be needed anymore for light on it because God will be there, and the light will come from Him. We also have teachings of Earth being made in God's presence in the cosmos and falling through space at the fall to its present location. End note.

Some say that the fall of Adam impacted only human death, not the entire creation, but the Bible says otherwise - that because of the fall, the plants grew thorns, thistles, etc. Scriptures say that all creation suffered because of the fall.

Note: Here are Bible verses indicating no death before the fall, and all things being impacted by the fall, including animals and plants:

Genesis 3:17-20 shows even plant life was impacted by the Fall of man, and that Eve was the mother of ALL living: "17 And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; 18 Thorns also and

thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.”

Romans 8 :21-22 speaks of all of creation being cursed: “21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.”

1 Corinthians 15:21-22, 26, and 45 speak of Adam as the first man, and as death entering the world at his Fall: “21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

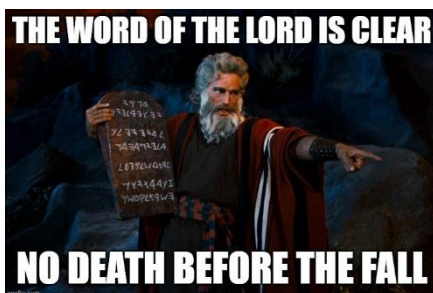
22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.”

Romans 5: 12-14 also teachings these doctrines of death originating from sin of man: “12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: 13 (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.”

End note.



*Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: Again, refer to The Book of Mormon's explicit teaching on no death before the fall: 2 Ne. 2:22 emphatically states that “**all**” things must have remained in the state after which they were created were it not for the fall of Adam. It reads: “...**all things which were created must have remained in the same state** in which they were after they were created, and they must have remained forever, and had no end. 23 And they would have had **no***

children; ...” End note.

Evolutionists frequently claim that the average person is not smart enough to understand evolution, and some Christian evolutionists try to argue that God simply taught the early people in a simple way when he said six days of creation, but in reality, the ancients were probably much smarter than us.

Note: I agree; to start a good university you take really smart people and hope that continues. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: It's the same way with Adam - he was extremely smart (and righteous). Despite the fall, Latter-Day Saints hold Adam in high esteem. End note.

Genesis 1:6-7 speaks of a firmament of water over the Earth. The firmament could be water in space because it's above heaven or above the place where the birds fly. The firmament of water could have fallen at the flood and contributed to the flood waters.

Note: I don't see a need for firmament waters with all the water available under the crust, but an ancient firmament surrounding Earth remains a possibility. Scriptures about the firmament are to me rather mysterious. Unless you consider the current atmosphere as the firmament, we can't measure the firmament today, particularly if it was something of a water canopy, as Hovind and others suggest, which is now gone. For more on scientific data suggesting Earth as a hydroplanet filled with much more water than mainstream science understands, see Universal Model Science's Hydroplanet chapter and their Magma Pseudoscientific chapter. Evolution Cruncher also has a chapter against magma. Genesis refers to a water-based creation, not a ball of magma, and science is beginning to figure that out. I'll comment further on the possibility of an ice canopy as Hovind suggests in the dinosaur seminar 3 notes, including providing a reference to a man who saw it in vision. End note.

Hovind has a theory that the 1st heaven is the sky where birds fly, the 2nd is where the lights like sun and stars are, and the 3rd is where God is.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: This is a useful and likely accurate analogy. The Latter-day Saints also understand heaven as being divided into three different sections or heavens to accommodate the differing levels of righteousness of God's children. Read D&C 76 for more on that revelation. End note.

The Bible speaks about the round earth being created, so Christians have always known that the Earth is round not flat.

A canopy of water in the sky could have blocked out harmful radiation from the Sun, which could explain the long lifespans of pre-flood people.

Note: Other theories for the long lifespans of pre-flood people include a higher oxygen content or an otherwise manipulation of atmospheric content based on plates pulling apart, perhaps releasing various gases, etc. End note.

Cracks in the plates are likely places where water came out from fountains of the deep during the flood, as spoken of in Genesis.

One dinosaur that's 80 ft long had the same nostril size as a horse, and in order to oxygenate this animal, sucking air through that small nostril would have lit a fire, so it is likely that oxygen content at the time of the dinosaurs was higher!

Air bubbles trapped in Amber Rock (which is petrified tree sap) often have 50% more oxygen than our current atmosphere of 32% rather than 21% oxygen!

A water canopy firmament could have doubled air pressure before the flood, and the more air pressure, the easier it is to breathe (as noted by difficulty breathing in high altitudes where the pressure is low). More oxygen percentage and more air pressure would saturate our plasma with oxygen, which would make us much more physically strong. **Hyperbaric oxygen Chambers** have been shown to heal many wounds quickly that could not be otherwise healed. Stroke, leprosy, cerebral palsy, multiple sclerosis many diseases are being treated with success using hyperbaric chambers. More oxygen during surgery results in much less infection and much faster recovery. A football team uses a hyperbaric chamber for their athletes, who recover much faster in it.

Hovind went in a sealed chamber where the atmosphere pressure was tripled and it saturated his blood with oxygen and he felt great energy from this exposure.

A tomato plant was raised on increased oxygen and it grew to a massive tree-like size and produced a massive number of tomatoes, and the cherry tomatoes got to the size of baseballs.

The birds chirp an hour before sunrise, and the frequency of the chirping triggers the stoma in the plants to open. There are similar positive effects in classical music, as this bird frequency is often found there; a man experimented with playing classical music with his corn, and it grew to a massive size of 15 feet tall. Sonic bloom is a term used to describe growing plants to a very large size with special frequency and minerals.

The national Center for Science education was started by Carnegie to keep evolution in schools – it's a tiny building.

Sometimes, human artifacts are found in coal - a bell, the sole of a shoe, an iron

pot, etc. Coal formed in the flood. Genesis 1:29 says there were green herbs over all the face of the Earth.

Hovind says flood waters were deposited, making the oceans, and that there didn't used to be oceans before the flood.

Note: I believe Earth was made from water, and it has always been mostly water. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: It's possible that some of the waters were gathered in the north (as the D&C indicates), whatever that means, perhaps inside the Earth through an ancient opening that opened during the flood, perhaps closed by miles of ice now. End note.

There are leaf deposits in Antarctica. This helps us understand how there was a lot more biomass that was turned into coal; during the flood there may have been a lot more vegetation than we currently see, which leads to lots of coal.

Note: Again, Hovind says all of Earth could have had vegetation without any oceans pre-flood. I think land precipitated out of the waters in the beginning. But to his credit, Hovind does promote a water-based rather than magma-based creation of earth, as the scripture says. As I mentioned earlier, learn about the hydroplanet from Universal Model Science vol. 1 and Evolution Cruncher (which Cruncher Hovind highly endorses). End note.

Some tried to say that the ancients before the flood did not live up to 900 years; they say those were counted in months rather than years, but this cannot be, otherwise the known birth ages of some would put their father at 5 years old which is nonsense.

Note: Old ages of the ancients recorded in the Bible remain a looming problem for evolutionist, who insist we are getting better, not worse. End note.

We have found various super tall skeletons; the Bible says there were giants in those days before the flood; as people get older and older, they grow.

Note: Particularly in the better environment, the likely higher oxygen content, and fewer genetic defects from that early time, etc. See the book Giants Who Ruled America: The Great Smithsonian Coverup.

Only one bone in the human body grows back if you take it out, and that is the lower rib. This is compelling evidence for Adam's rib removal to make Eve.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: I view the rib account as one of the fundamentally symbolic passages of scripture. Several Latter-day Prophets (including Kimball) have taught such a thing, but the rib theory remains a possibility. My view, as has been taught by Latter-day Saint prophets, is that mankind is the literal offspring of God the Father and God the Mother; that the society of heaven is like the society of Earth (families), but with glory. The family is the key to the mystery of God and the mystery of human potential. End note.

Nevada, Illinois, and all over America, they find 9, 10, 11, and 12 ft. tall human skeletons.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: This builds the case that there were people in America before the flood. The Latter-day Saints teach that the Garden of Eden was in Missouri and that Noah's ark launched from North America (landing in Turkey). End note.

They found a 39 lb. copper ax head; it must have been swung by a giant. The Smithsonian museum actively hides skeletons of giants as it goes against evolution theory that we started out small and are getting bigger. It is true over the last 100 or so years we've increased on average 6 inches in industrialized countries due to increased sanitation, nutrition, etc.

Turks claim to have found Noah's skeleton, which is a 12 ft. tall skeleton.

Note: It likely wasn't Noah himself, he wasn't buried in the flood, he wouldn't have petrified. I suppose there's a chance his remains were preserved. But really Noah would have been resurrected at the time of Christ's resurrection, when all the righteous up to that time were risen. This is still a cool finding, Noah or not. End note.

If Noah was quite tall his cubit would have been larger. This allows for possibly quite a larger ark.

A 47-in femur was found, which would indicate about a 13 ft. tall person.

2 Peter 3 points out that in the last days, people will scoff at God's word and say that all things continue as they have from the beginning of the creation. It says they are willingly ignorant of the creation and the flood.

The average age before the flood was over 900 years.

The Bible says you are made in God's image, so it should offend you when people claim you come from an ape.

Those who teach evolution and destroy children's faith are in serious trouble-

scripture says if you offend one of these little ones that believe, it's better that a millstone is hung about your neck and you drown in the sea.

The Nebraska Man was supposedly between apes and humans, yet all they had for him was one tooth. They built the entire man and his wife from that one tooth, and it was later discovered that the tooth came from a pig.

The 1912 Piltdown Man was in textbooks for years and was found to be a deliberate fraud. It was in the books for 40 years, destroying faith. It was a human skull and an ape jawbone filed down and fit together.

The Neanderthal Man still in the books was proven wrong 50 years ago to be just an old man with arthritis. The back was curved. Man is slowly going down not slowly coming up. All of the approximately 300 Neanderthal skeletons they have found are all perfectly normal human skeletons with the same average height of people today etc., yet they claim it's a missing link.

One expert dentist who made teeth for various ages, etc., pointed out that Neanderthal teeth are just normal teeth of people with diseases.

Neanderthal was named after a place in Germany called Neander and that place was named after a man who wrote the song "Praise the Lord the Almighty" which speaks about God's creation.

Evolutionists tell artists who create designs for textbooks and museums to dress these supposed human link creatures up all fancy to depict devolution with skin color and hair etc., though you can tell none of that from the bones.

The eyebrow ridge bone continues to grow as you age so a very old person could have a very large eyebrow ridge bone, people lived a lot longer before the flood. The back of the head would elongate as well due to the muscles always pulling the head back.

Neanderthals are humans living several hundred years, not missing link hominids.

The bones of the Clydesdale are slightly bigger than a normal horse, but that doesn't prove the horse is becoming a truck.

The Chromagdin Man & Australopithecus africanus were hominid monkey-man claims in the textbooks but were proven wrong.

Lucy was found by a man who went to Africa on grant money to find the missing link to evolution, and two weeks before this grant money ran out, he found Lucy's skeleton, claiming it as the missing link. He was highly motivated to be able to

renew his grant money and not an unbiased observer.

The Lucy skeleton was probably a monkey skeleton, and the skull bones were very crushed so you could not tell anything about it from the skull bones; but in the textbook they show a half human skull for Lucy, and this is part of the propaganda. The knee joint was found a mile and a half away from the rest of the skeleton and 50 ft. deeper in the strata!

Note: Lucy may have been a pygmy human. Lucy was found near pygmy villages whose skeletons look just like Luch. Read about the Hobbit (skull) Evidence in Universal Model volume 2. End note.

The St. Louis Zoo put human feet on their Lucy display; no, not a single foot bone was found, and all similar skeletons had the feet of monkeys. The zookeeper was informed about this **deception** and **refused to change the display**, saying that they just wanted to focus on the general impression of the display rather than updating the display with new evidence; this zoo boss was **deliberately promoting evolution against real evidence** to the contrary; he was **lying to the children** to promote the narrative.

In Africa, in some ash, they found normal human footprints. They dated the ash as 3.7 million years old, and they claimed normal humans did not exist that long ago, so they claimed that the prints were some kind of non-human footprint, and they said if they didn't know better, **they looked just like normal human footprints**. A human footprint expert verified that these footprints were exactly like normal human footprints, yet they persisted in saying they were not normal human prints due to the carbon dating of the ash at 3.7 million years old.

Evolution theory is a hindrance to common sense research!

They still made exhibit depictions of people making these footprints as half monkey half man! No bones were found and the foot looks exactly like a human footprint, so these were propaganda pieces.

Peking Man was found in a cave where they had human tools and some monkey skeletons, but also a lot of human skeletons. They didn't tell anyone about the human skeletons; they claimed it was monkeys in there learning how to use tools, but it was obviously humans eating monkeys, as some cultures do to this day.

One man took a bunch of convicts and had them go anywhere and bring him back the bones they found. He would haphazardly label them as half monkeys, half human bones. He took human teeth and an ape skull cap, put them together, and said he found the missing link. He hid the fact that he found two normal human skeletons in the same area. He **hid them** in his room under the floorboards!

See the book *Bones of Contention*, which analyzes the various caveman hominid claims.

Most states have laws requiring the textbooks in schools to be accurate. Many evolutionary claims about human-monkey creatures have been proven wrong, yet they persist in the textbooks.

Originally they called humans ‘homo sapiens,’ meaning wise, but now they call us ‘homo sapiens sapiens,’ meaning very wise. There is a verse in the Bible that rebukes the people who call themselves wise, which says they are truly foolish. The Bible says, “professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” (Romans 1:22) If you believe your ancestors were monkeys, you are a fool!

If you find a fossil in the dirt, all you know is that it died; you can’t prove it had different kinds of offspring, or whether it had any offspring at all.

Today, animals cannot produce anything other than their kind, and bones cannot say their ancestors did!

Evolution only happens in the imagination, never in reality.

The Stone Age was likely that people, after the flood, quickly made tools of mediocre quality so they didn't have to stop hunting for a long time to make complex tools when following a pack of animals. There are people still making stone tools today.

He suggests a several hundred year ice age after the flood, and that when you catch up to a herd you make tools on the spot to hunt and leave them behind instead of carrying them.

Note: This quick tool making on site and leaving them behind works whether or not there was an ice age (yes, the ice age is a contested point). End note.

The word prehistoric was added to the dictionary about a hundred years ago - there’s no such thing as prehistoric!

Hovind suggests a pre-flood canopy of water would have increased the air pressure and resulted in much larger animals.

Note: Remember, we discussed the firmament earlier in this book. Whether this canopy is the means of the larger animals or some other means, we know from the fossil record that much larger versions of today’s animals did exist in ancient times. End note.

Insects in oxygen-rich water grow a thousand times bigger than their counterparts. There’s a dragonfly fossil with a 50-inch wingspan. There are fossil cockroaches 18 in. long. There’s a fossil centipede in Germany 8 1/2 feet long.

There are fossil grasshoppers over two ft. long. There's a fossil tarantula with a three-foot leg span. There are fossil cattails 60 ft. tall. There's a fossil donkey nine ft. to the shoulder in Texas. There's a 12 ft. buffalo horn span fossil, a giant elk fossil with a 12 ft. antler, a 10 ft. kangaroo fossil, and a fossil goose the size of an elephant. There's an eight-foot beaver fossil; there were probably bigger trees back then, too, for them to chew.

An increased air pressure environment would diffuse more oxygen into the water and allow for larger fish. Some shark tooth fossils indicate a 80 ft. sharks. Some people are growing fish four times the normal size in pressurized environments. There are massive turtle fossils.

Oyster shells in mountain tops of Peru 2 miles above sea level are two and a half feet wide.

Petrified clams in closed positions are found around the world, so they must have died quickly, as they usually open when dead. They have been found on top of Mount Everest.

After the flood, the mountains rose taller.

Note: We don't have uplift evidence in modern times (there's no map of uplift because it isn't happening; we only have a map of horizontal plate movement, not vertical, so no slow movement), but it's a plausible theory that uplift occurred in the flood, making a new heaven and a new Earth; the hills low and the valleys exalted, as we may well see again. I do believe, however, in the necessity of very deep flood waters, some 5 miles deep or 30,000 feet, which would have covered today's mountains and created an immense pressurized environment to make the abundant quartz-based fossils we find around the world (which require more pressure than mere calcification). Trees and animals simply aren't turning into fossils these days (not even at sites like Mt. Saint Helens), so something unique took place during the flood to make the world's fossil record. There are no in-progress fossils today, with the possible exception of small unique formations of calcium-based fossils, of a different nature than the quartz-based fossils we predominantly see in the fossil record. End note.

Reptiles never stop growing, so if they lived a long time, they would get very big. The word dinosaur means terrible lizard. Today, apparently, the jeans for largeness in reptiles are gone. (Note- or they just aren't living long enough.)

Human fossils and human fossilized prints have been found alongside dinosaur fossils and prints around the world. Science magazine pointed out that dinosaur and mammal fossils were found together. The Ica stone carvings in Peru show humans and dinosaurs together. There have been human footprints found next to dinosaur tracks.

Note: Museums refuse to show displays of ancient and modern animals together to push the narrative that they didn't live together when, in fact, we have found these animals together. End note.

Hundreds of dinosaur track sites have been found around the world, and museums take great care not to display where there are human prints alongside dinosaur prints as they contradict evolution theory.

It is logical that people would walk where the dinosaur tracks already were; those made a path to walk more easily.

See the book Texas Tracks and Artifacts.

We have a size 24 fossil footprint of humans.

There was a dig where dinosaur and human prints were together. Nova and an evolutionist came. Nova didn't film much of the tracks of the dig, but they did interview the evolutionist, and the evolutionist claimed that he had not seen anything there to disprove evolution; but what he didn't tell the cameraman was that he **refused to even turn around and look** at the tracks they had been working on so he could claim he had not seen anything there to disprove evolution! **Nova knew that he would not turn** his back to look at the tracks, and they **would not let the person doing the dig respond to the evolutionist's** claims.

Evolution is not real science because it is closed-minded to any evidence that goes against it!

Note: Today, they're even less honest; they look at anything and say it supports evolution whether it does or not. They are so set on evolution being true that they'll bend any and all evidence toward it in the most astounding lapses of coherent intelligence. End note.

See the book Footprints and the Stones of Time.

There's a fossilized hammer. Some think there was no iron before the flood, but the Bible says there was. Tubal Cain was an artificer in brass and iron (Genesis 4:22).

Coal was formed in the flood, and many human artifacts are found inside coal deposits which would not be there if the coal was formed long before man. Some things that have been found in coal include a brass bell, a gold chain, an iron pot, etc.

A toy doll was found in rock 300 ft. down in supposed 12-million-year-old rock. Human tools have been found in rock layers that are supposedly 55 million years

old.

Egyptians knew about electricity, as evidenced in part by a hieroglyphic of them using electricity.

One person said perhaps if the finder of these artifacts understood evolution like we do today, he would have hesitated to announce his findings. In other words, if this person knew how important our theory was, he wouldn't have told anyone what he found.

Advanced stone tools were found in glacial deposits supposed to be 60,000 to 125,000 years old. The director of the museum was fired for refusing to fire the discoverer.

God told Adam and Eve to eat fruits vegetables nuts and seeds, and when you eat seeds you get vitamins that you wouldn't otherwise get.

There's a nut inside of peach seeds. Cyanide found in the seed is harmless. Take this nut, and it will selectively destroy cancer cells. A tribe that traditionally lived very long was well known for eating apricot seeds. Apricot seed oil on the face prevents wrinkling.

The Bible says bread strengthens your heart! Healthy oils, omega acids, and vitamins in natural bread will make the bread go bad, so to make more money, people took those out of the bread for a longer shelf life, and now the bread isn't so healthy. This is why the Bible talks about **daily** bread - it's not supposed to last long. This manipulation of bread, which destroys naturally healthy grains, is part of why money is the root of all evil. When we went to white flour without these oils from whole grain, we began to develop strokes, heart attacks, etc. The whiter the bread, the sooner you're dead. White bread fills you up and keeps you from getting all the vitamins you need.

Drug therapy is evolution-based, claiming, 'You're nothing but a bunch of chemicals, so we will treat your sickness with a bunch of chemicals.' Medicine for pain does not treat the problem, only the symptom; you need to go in and fix the problem; your body gives you pain as a warning signal like a check engine light in a car- you don't just cover the light. The Bible says the love of money is the root of all evil, and drug companies don't make money when you're doing well.

See Bill Sardi on nutrition.

Fluoride is extremely toxic to the immune system.

Many doctors and dentists are recommending that fluoride be not put in water or

toothpaste.

The Bible says to wash your hands when you've dealt with blood or a dead body, and early doctors weren't doing that. When a doctor suggested you have to wash your hands between patients, he got fired from three different hospitals in a row and was put in a mental institution for making this suggestion, where a patient murdered him.

See Hovind's video on the Bible and health.

The teeth of many herbivores have some sharpness, so we can't just say any sharp tooth means meat eater like the fruit bat, the panda, or the monkey. The Bible says everything was vegetarian before the flood. Genesis 9 says the fear of man came upon the animals after the flood. After the flood, God said they could eat all the creatures.

Note: Perhaps the animal sacrifices before the flood were not eaten? Perhaps this is based on the assumption that animal sacrifice didn't begin until Moses. But Adam and Eve made coats of skins, Cain and Abel made sacrifices, and Noah made a sacrifice after the flood, etc. Also note that the law of Moses outlawed the consumption of swine and other animals, though these prohibitions were apparently lifted in New Testament times. Many have raised nutritional concerns about eating pork. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: The record called the Pearl of Great Price record of lost Bible records teaches that Adam was commanded to offer animal sacrifices. End note.

You can eat meat, but it does cause suffering.

Note: Not only does meat consumption cause suffering to the animals (though Biblical methods of slaying beasts were the least painful for them) - but studies in nutritional science show that those who eat less meat and dairy are healthier. The Seventh Day Adventists are vegetarian and have been watched closely by nutrition scientists, who have found their health is superior. These nutritional science findings are strong evidence supporting multiple scriptures warning against the unnecessary and overuse of meat (as in D&C 89). The witness of many world religions unite in the message to reduce meat consumption. Indeed, science always has to catch up to what God has kindly revealed to those who trust Him. But the Bible and other passages are clear – meat is ordained for man's use as needed; beware of radical agendas that would place animal rights on par with human rights. End note.

When you see a smashed car you don't wonder why the manufacturer built a smashed car, you know that it got smashed, it didn't start that way. It's the same with the way things are in the world today; this is not the way that God made it originally. Suffering we see in the world today is not the way God created it. We live in a junkyard. Man has wrecked God's world but God will fix it. Note- God allows us to choose good or evil, and that gets messy.

The Bible says the lion will eat straw.

Get involved in the war for God. If you're not going to fight, then carry bullets. Do something.

PART 7: EDEN, THE FALL, & THE ENTRANCE OF DEATH INTO THE WORLD



No Death Before The Fall: Plain & Precious Teachings Opposing Evolutionary Origins

Evolutionists, to try and squeeze their theory into God's word, claim that the paradisaical state was before the creation and was merely the pre-mortal spirit realm. But the creation clearly happened before the fall. Adam and Eve were physical beings on the physical earth when they fell. When Adam ate the fruit, the entirety of creation fell into the condition of mortal flesh.

The **Bible Dictionary entry on the Fall of Adam** explains that the fall was a literal historic event: “[Latter-day revelation supports the biblical account of the fall, showing that it was a historical event that literally occurred in the history of man.](#)”

Not so for the evolutionists, they insist that Adam’s fall is merely an allegory for coming to earth.

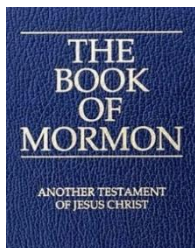
President Dallin H. Oaks taught, “When Adam and Eve received the first commandment, they were in a transitional state, no longer in the spirit world but with physical bodies not yet subject to death and not yet capable of procreation. They could not fulfill the Father’s first commandment without transgressing the barrier between the bliss of the Garden and the terrible trials and wonderful opportunities of mortal life. ... The Prophet Lehi explained that “[if Adam had not transgressed he would not have fallen](#)” (2 Ne. 2: 22) but would have remained in the same state in which he was created. “[And they would have had no children; wherefore they would have remained in a state of innocence, having no joy, for they knew no misery; doing no good, for they knew no sin](#)” (2 Ne.2:23) But the Fall was planned, Lehi concludes, because “[all things have been done in the wisdom of him who knoweth all things](#)” (2 Ne. 2:24) It was Eve who first transgressed the limits of Eden in order to initiate the conditions of mortality. Her act, whatever its nature, was formally a transgression but eternally a glorious necessity to open the doorway toward eternal life. Adam showed his wisdom by doing the same. And thus Eve and “[Adam fell that men might be](#)” (2 Ne. 2:25).” (President Oaks, The Great Plan of Happiness, Oct.1993, <https://www.churchofjesuschrist.org/study/general-conference/1993/10/the-great-plan-of-happiness?lang=eng>)

Elder Soares recently taught, “Christ graciously fulfilled the will of the Father through His infinite and merciful sacrifice. He overcame the sting of physical and spiritual **death, introduced to the world through the Fall**, (2 Ne. 2:22) offering us the glorious possibility of eternal salvation.” (Elder Soares, Jesus Christ: The Care Giver of our Soul, April, 2021, <https://www.churchofjesuschrist.org/study/general-conference/2021/04/41soares?lang=eng>)

A friend of mine told me an evolutionist in the church challenged her to come up with teachings from the prophets against evolution within the last 5 years. Read ‘em and weep, mission accomplished. The Christian picture is clear: God made the Earth, animals, and man, then the fall occurred, then death entered the world. Why this gentile-spirited man needed a witness from within the last 5 years is foreign to me, but there he has it.

The doctrine of no death before the fall appears in all four of the Standard Works of scripture. What more witness do we need?

For starters, **The Book of Mormon** has a lot to say about no death before the fall. Surely this is one reason why **President Benson** taught, “[the Book of Mormon exposes the enemies of Christ \[and\] confounds false doctrines](#)” (Teachings of Presidents of the Church: Ezra Taft Benson [2014], 132).



2 Nephi 2:22-23 is a key passage from the Book of Mormon against evolution, wherein the prophet Lehi teaches about the impossibility of death and birth before the fall of Adam: “**22** And now, behold, if Adam had not transgressed he would not have fallen, but he would have remained in the garden of Eden. And **all things** which were created must have remained in the **same state** in which they were after they were created; and they must have remained forever, and had no end. **23** And they would have had no children; wherefore they would have remained in a state of innocence, having no joy, for they knew no misery; doing no good, for they knew no sin.” (2 Ne. 2:22-23)

This scripture indicates that both Adam and other forms of life on Earth (“ALL THINGS”) would have remained in their same created state if the fall hadn’t occurred.

Again: **Alma 18:34**: “Ammon said unto him: I am a man; and **man in the beginning** was created after the image of God, and I am called by his Holy Spirit to teach these things unto this people, that they may be brought to a knowledge of that which is just and true;”

Indeed, if man in the beginning was in the image of God, there was no need for him to transform through the ages from lower life forms. There he was – fully formed man, IN THE BEGINNING! No time or need for death before the fall! How beautiful is the truth! How simple and sweet and glorious is the power of God!

Alma 12:23-24: says, “**23** And now behold, I say unto you that if it had been possible for Adam to have partaken of the fruit of the tree of life at that time,

there would have been no death, and the word would have been void, making God a liar, for he said: If thou eat thou shalt surely die. 24 And we see that death comes upon mankind, yea, the death which has been spoken of by Amulek, which is the temporal death; nevertheless there was a space granted unto man in which he might repent; therefore this life became a probationary state; a time to prepare to meet God;”

Alma 42:9 says, “9 ... the fall had brought upon all mankind a spiritual death as well as a temporal, that is, they were cut off from the presence of the Lord, ...”

This scripture indicates that both Adam and other forms of life on Earth would have remained in their same created state if the fall hadn’t occurred.

Pearl of Great Price: Moses 6:48: “And he said unto them: Because that Adam fell, we are; and **by his fall came death**; and we are made partakers of misery and woe.”

Doctrine & Covenants: D&C 77:6-7, 12: “6 Q. What are we to understand by the book which John saw, which was sealed on the back with seven seals? A. We are to understand that it contains the revealed will, mysteries, and the works of God; the hidden things of his economy concerning this earth during **the seven thousand years of its continuance, or its temporal existence**. 7 Q. What are we to understand by the seven seals with which it was sealed? A. We are to understand that the first seal contains the things of the first thousand years, and the second also of the second thousand years, and so on until the seventh.” 12 “Q. What are we to understand by the sounding of the trumpets, mentioned in the 8th chapter of Revelation? A. We are to understand that **as God made the world in six days, and on the seventh day he finished his work, and sanctified it, and also formed man out of the dust of the earth, even so, in the beginning of the seventh thousand years will the Lord God sanctify the earth**, and complete the salvation of man, and judge all things, and shall redeem all things, except that which he hath not put into his power, when he shall have sealed all things, unto the end of all things; and the sounding of the trumpets of the seven angels are the preparing and finishing of his work, in the beginning of the seventh thousand years—the preparing of the way before the time of his coming.”

Knowing this limit on the temporal life of Earth from the D&C, we know there was no life before that point. No birth, no death. If the temporal lifespan is 7,000 years, that means outside of that window of time, there was no temporal life. In other words, no birth or death before it.

The Bible is not silent on this topic either.

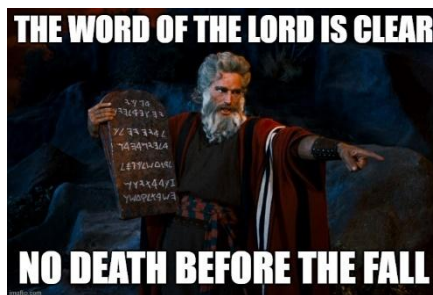


Genesis 3:17-20 shows even plant life was impacted by the Fall of man, and that Eve was the mother of ALL living: “17 And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; 18 Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. 20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.”

Romans 8 :21-22 speaks of all of creation being cursed: “21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.”

1 Corinthians 15:21-22, 26, and 45 speak of Adam as the first man, and as death entering the world at his Fall: “21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.
26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.
45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.”

Romans 5: 12-14 also teachings these doctrines of death originating from sin of man: “12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: 13 (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.”
[closing parenthesis not until verse 17]



Why any faithful Latter-day Saint would question a doctrine taught in all four of the standard works is a mystery to me. Yet Ben Spackman, an ardent evolutionist in the church, has made it his quest to try and explain away these plain and precious teachings. In case the scriptures weren't clear enough, many latter-day prophets have taught this doctrine as well. For him and those like him, no amount of inspired prophetic teachings will do. He wrote a large paper about his opinion of President Joseph Fielding Smith and other prophets being wrong about evolution. Oh well. Let them be. We will just keep proclaiming God's word and the teachings of His prophets, which are one and the same.

The 1st **Presidency** published in 1972 in "Selections from Answers to Gospel Questions" that "**The animals were all created and placed on the earth preceding the coming of Adam and Eve. In fact the whole earth and the creatures on it were prepared for Adam and Eve before Adam's fall.... The earth and all upon it were *not subject to death* until Adam fell.... It was through the fall of Adam that death came into the world.**" (pp. 53-54, 111)

In the aforementioned "Selections from Answers to Gospel Questions," at least 35 passages from "Man: His Origin & Destiny" are suggested. **Joseph Fielding Smith** teaches against death before the fall at length in his *Origins* book (pp. 2, 50-51, 279-280, 328-329, 357-358, 362-365, 376-377, 381, 384, 387-396, 463-464).

Brigham Young echoed this teaching, that all life, not just human life, was cursed at the time of the fall: "**they transgressed a command of the Lord, and through that transgression sin came into the world. . . . Then came the curse upon the fruit, upon the vegetables, and upon our mother earth; and it came upon the creeping things, upon the grain in the field, the fish in the sea, and upon all things pertaining to this earth, through Man's transgression.**" (Brigham Young, *Journal of Discourses*, 10:312)

Harold B. Lee also taught that the fall of Adam impacted the entire Earth,

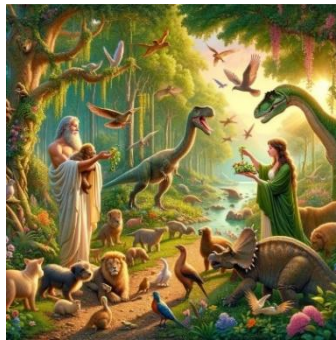
including animal and plant life: **“Besides the Fall having had to do with Adam and Eve, causing a change to come over them, that change affected all human nature, all of the natural creations, all of the creation of animals, plants—all kinds of life were changed. The earth itself became subject to death. ... How it took place no one can explain, and anyone who would attempt to make an explanation would be going far beyond anything the Lord has told us. But a **change was wrought over the whole face of the creation, which up to that time had not been subject to death.**”** (Teachings of Presidents of the Church: Harold B. Lee, 2000, p. 20)



Bruce R. McConkie demonstrated that the creation before the fall was paradisaical, and not based in evolution. He said, **"There is no salvation in a system of religion that rejects the doctrine of the Fall or that assumes man is the end product of evolution and so was not subject to a fall.** True believers know that this earth and man and **all forms of life** were created in an Edenic, or **paradisiacal**, state in which there was no mortality, no procreation, **no death**. In that primeval day Adam and Eve were “in a state of innocence, having no joy, for they knew no misery; doing no good, for they knew no sin.” (2 Ne. 2:23.) But in the providences of the Lord, “Adam fell that men might be; and men are, that they might have joy.” (2 Ne. 2:25.) By his fall, Adam introduced temporal and spiritual death into the world and caused this earth life to become a probationary estate." (The Caravan Moves On by Elder Bruce R McConkie) (<https://www.lds.org/general-conference/1984/10/the-caravan-moves-on?lang=eng&query=evolution#watch=video>)

John Taylor taught that before the Fall of Adam, animals all got along. **Does this sound like survival of the fittest?** Take a look: “Now, restoration signifies a bringing back, and must refer to something which existed before . . . when a prophet speaks of the restoration of all things, he means that all things have undergone a change, and are to be again restored to their primitive order, even as they first existed. . . . “First, then, **it becomes necessary for us to take a view of**

creation, as it rolled in purity from the hand of its Creator; and if we can discover the true state in which it then existed, and **understand the changes that have taken place since, then we shall be able to understand what is to be restored.** . . the **beasts of the earth were all in perfect harmony with each other;** the lion ate straw like the ox—the wolf dwelt with the lamb—the leopard lay down with the kid—the cow and bear fed together, in the same pasture . . . all was peace and harmony, and nothing to hurt nor disturb, in all the holy mountain. . . the earth yielded neither noxious weeds nor poisonous plants, nor useless thorns and thistles; indeed, every thing that grew was just calculated for the food of man’ [,] beast, fowl, and creeping thing; and their food was all vegetable....This scene, which was so beautiful a little before, had now become the abode of sorrow and toil, of death and mourning: the earth groaning with its production of accursed thorns and thistles; man and beast at enmity . . . **Soon man begins to persecute, hate, and murder his fellow; until at length the earth is filled with violence; all flesh becomes corrupt,** the powers of darkness prevail . . . But men have degenerated, and **greatly changed, as well as the earth.**" (John Taylor, The Government of God." [Liverpool: S. W. Richards, 1852], 105.)



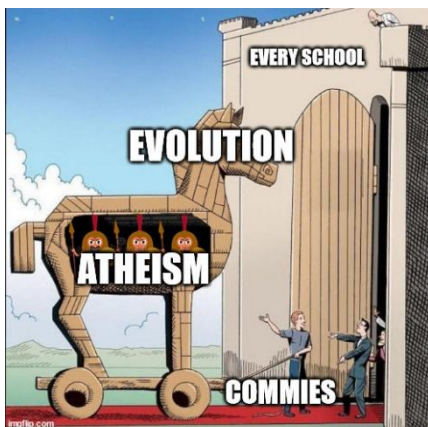
Wilford Woodruff and other prophets also taught that all animals fell as part of the Fall of Adam, which I won’t include here for brevity.

Joseph Fielding Smith taught that the Earth was peaceful, and there weren’t millions of years of death before Adam: “The Lord pronounced the earth good when it was finished. Everything upon its face was called good. There was no death in the earth before the fall of Adam. **I do not care what the scientists say in regard to dinosaurs and other creatures upon the earth millions of years ago, that lived and died and fought and struggled for existence. When the earth was created and was declared good, peace was upon its face among all its creatures. Strife and wickedness were not found here, neither was there any corruption.**” (Joseph Fielding Smith, Doctrines of Salvation, Volume 1, p. 108)

Joseph Fielding Smith taught that animal life also fell at Adam's fall, and that before the fall, neither man nor animal had blood: "Thus when man fell the earth fell together with all forms of life on its face. Death entered; procreation began; the probationary experiences of mortality had their start. Before this fall there was neither mortality, nor birth, nor death, nor — for that matter — did Adam so much as have blood in his veins (and the same would be true for other forms of life), for blood is an element pertaining only to mortality." (Joseph Fielding Smith, *Man: His Origin and Destiny*, pp. 362-365; *Doctrines of Salvation*, vol. 1, pp. 76-77)

Spencer W. Kimball expounded upon this concept, that finer substance than blood was in man's body before the fall: "As in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive. Adam and Eve transgressed a law and were responsible for a change that came to all their posterity, that of mortality. Could it have been the different food which made the change? Somehow **blood, the life-giving element in our bodies, replaced the finer substance which coursed through their bodies before**. They and we became mortal, subject to illness, pains, and even the physical dissolution called death." (Spencer W. Kimball, *The Teachings of Spencer W. Kimball*, 44.), (Spencer W. Kimball, "Absolute Truth", *Ensign*, September 1978, given at BYU, see <https://speeches.byu.edu/talks/spencer-w-kimball/absolute-truth/>)

Harold B. Lee and other prophets also taught that Adam had no blood before the fall, but I won't include all the quotes here for brevity.



Joseph Fielding Smith demonstrated modern education's rejection of both the fall and atonement. He said, "Adam, our first parent,—and I believe that doctrine very firmly, which is now discounted in the world—through his transgression brought into the world death, and through death came suffering and sin. **The first death that was pronounced upon him was banishment from the presence of the Lord.** For Adam died two deaths, a spiritual death, or banishment from the presence of God, which is the first death, and which is like the second death which will be pronounced upon the wicked when they are cast out of the presence of the Lord; and he also died the mortal death. **Modern education** declares that there never was such a thing as the "fall" of man, but that conditions have always gone on in the same way as now in this mortal world. Here, say they, death and mutation have always held sway as natural conditions on this earth and everywhere throughout the universe the same laws obtain. It is declared that man has made his ascent to the exalted place he now occupies through countless ages of development which has gradually distinguished him from lower forms of life. Such a doctrine of necessity **discards the story of Adam and the Garden of Eden**, which it looks upon as a myth coming down to us from an early age of foolish ignorance and superstition. Moreover, it is taught that **since death was always here, and a natural condition prevailing throughout all space, there could not possibly come a redemption** from Adam's transgression, hence there was no need for a Savior for a fallen world." (Melchizedek Priesthood, Joseph Fielding Smith, Improvement Era, 1937, Vol. XI. May, 1937. No. 5)

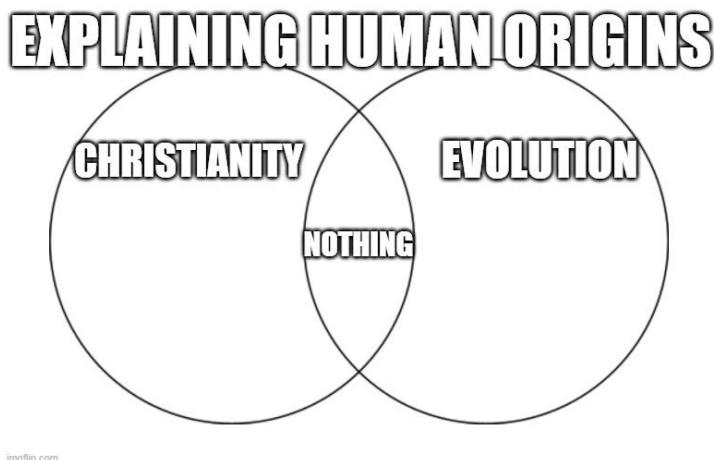
Remember a recent message from Elder **Jeffrey R. Holland** affirmed the reality of the fall. (Jeffrey R. Holland, April 2015, [Where Justice, Love, and Mercy Meet \(churchofjesuschrist.org\)](http://www.churchofjesuschrist.org))

Joseph Fielding Smith put it succinctly, "If there is anybody here that believes that **death has always been going on**, and that sin was always here, he will have a **difficult time to explain Adam and the fall, or the atonement.**" Doctrines of Salvation, 1:119-120.)

In view of the many scriptural and prophetic teachings of no death existing on Earth before the fall, **Elder Bruce R. McConkie** asked, "Can you harmonize these things with the evolutionary postulate that death has always existed and that the various forms of life have evolved from preceding forms over astronomically long periods of time?" (Elder Bruce R. McConkie, June 1, 1980, <https://speeches.byu.edu/talks/bruce-r-mcconkie/seven-deadly-heresies/>)

The obvious answer is no. No harmony can exist between Christianity and

evolution theory. Any attempts to mesh the two, although perhaps well-meaning, result in weaker faith in the word of God.



No Death Before the Fall: Letter from Joseph Fielding Smith to a Missionary

(Special thanks to Ben Spackman referring to this letter in some of his research (despite Spackman taking the position against NDBF), and special thanks to Daniel Burdette for going and tracking down the letter, which is now public, from the Church History Library. The following are excerpts from the letter.)

from the Church History Library: Elder Joseph Fielding Smith to missionary David S. King, Jan. 5, 1940:

... In your letter to Elder Lyman you repeated in substance what you said to me that “there is a conflict between the unanimous verdict of science ** and the doctrine of Mormonism ** that man appeared first about six thousand years ago,” etc.

While I am not in a position to admit that the “unanimous” verdict of scientific men, is to the conclusion that organic evolution is correct, it is conceded that the vast majority of them hold to this view, and that living things upon the earth, all related, date back many millions of years ago. It must also be conceded by any reasonable thinking person that there is most definitely a conflict between these teachings and the teachings in the revelations, and they cannot possibly be harmonized, try as we may to bring such a thing to pass.

We as members of the Church, are left then, to reach one of the following conclusions:

1) The overwhelming voice of scientifically trained men is true and the revelations of the Lord are false dealing with the origin of things, including man.

2) The overwhelming conclusion of scientifically trained men is wrong because it is in conflict with the revealed word of God in relation to the origin of things, including man.

3) That the Lord in his limited wisdom has not caught up with the knowledge possessed by scientific men, and must modify His views as science reveals to him its revelations, and as progression among mankind is made. In other words, belief in God is a progressive process which changes and is modified as man advances.

4) There might be this other ground, but it is not in any sense consistent: That the Prophets misunderstood the word of the Lord and their revelations are only partly true and contain matters expressing the prophets' opinions and we are to judge whether the matter is a revelation or an opinion merely by our reason and scientific conclusions. I think you must agree with me that such a thought as this is out of the picture. We must confine our views to one of the first two.

The overwhelming conclusion of scientifically trained men is wrong because it is in conflict with the revealed word of God in relation to the origin of things, including man.

If a person has a convincing testimony that the Lord did actually speak to Joseph Smith and call him to be His prophet, then he must, it seems to me, accept the revelations which have come through that prophet. Therefore, whatever is taught in the world, no matter how universally, that is in conflict with those revelations, must be erroneous.

President Joseph F. Smith once said in answer to those who believed in these theories: "The Church holds to the definite authority of divine revelation which must be the standard; and that, so-called 'science' has changed from age to age in its deductions, and as divine revelation is truth, and must abide forever, views as to the lesser should conform to the positive statements of the greater; and further, that in institutions founded by the Church for the teaching of theology as well as other branches of education, its instructors must be in harmony with its principles of doctrine **.

The truth persists, but the theories of philosophy change and are over thrown. What men use today as a scaffold for scientific purposes from which to reach out into the unknown of truth, may be torn down tomorrow, having served their purpose; but faith is an eternal principle through which the humble believer may secure everlasting solace." President Joseph F. Smith, Era 14:549-551. Again President Smith said: "There is no science, nor philosophy, that can supersede

God Almighty's truth. The Lord has said, 'My word is truth,' and indeed it is; and I believe that the Latter-day Saints know enough about the word of God to know it is his word when they see it and shun whatever is not; and they will abide by every word of God, for it is truth. As the Savior said, 'If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.' I believe that the Latter-day Saints, and especially the leading men in Israel have sufficient knowledge and understanding of the principles of the gospel that they know the truth, and they are made free by its possession – free from sin, free from error, free from darkness, from the traditions of men, from vain philosophy, and from untried unproved theories of scientists, that need demonstration beyond the possibility of doubt.

We have had science and philosophy through all the ages, and they have undergone change after change. Scarcely a century has passed but they have introduced new theories of science and philosophy that supersede the old traditions and the old faith and the old doctrines entertained by philosophers and scientists. These things may undergo continuous changes, but the word of God is always true, is always right. I want to say to you that the principles of the Gospel are always true –the principle of faith in God, of repentance from sin, of baptism for the remission of sins by authority of God, and the laying on of hands for the gift of the Holy Ghost; these principles are always true and you cannot get away from them. No other name, under heaven, is given, but that of Jesus Christ, by which you can be saved or exalted in the kingdom of God.”-

Personally, I would like to have you ponder over a few vital problems having much to do with the fundamental doctrines of our faith. The scriptures say: “I know that, whatever God doeth, it shall be forever; nothing can be put to it, nor anything taken from it.” Eccl. 3:14. This thought seems to find ample confirmation in D&C 29:23-25. We learn from Moses 3:5-9, that everything was created in the spirit before it was naturally upon the earth and in this statement in Sec. 29, the truth is revealed that everything is entitled to receive the resurrection. “Not one hair, neither mote, shall be lost, for it is the workmanship of mine hand.”

Now the fundamental doctrine of the Church is that death was brought into the world through the transgression of Adam. See 2 Nephi 2:22. And the Atonement of Jesus Christ is the result of Adam's transgression.

The question is—If life first began on the earth millions of years ago, and that all things have developed from the simple forms of life to the complex forms that we see today, and if all down those ages every creature was dying how was death brought about in the beginning and down through these ages? What creature fell and brought death before the time of Adam?

If death was always here from that beginning millions of years ago and came naturally without any fall from some higher state, then by what manner of reasoning can a person justify the resurrection of these creatures including primitive man? They could not have any claim on the atonement of Jesus Christ for that comes by reason of the fall 2 Nephi 9: 6-7.

If death was always here, then how can we lay the charge to Adam? But considering all things, would it not be a good thing for you to read the first chapter of James verses 5-7? I am sure the Lord can direct a person in this matter if he seeks sincerely as well now as he did in the day of Joseph Smith. Again I commend to you the words of Moroni: Moroni 10:3-5. "And by the power of the Holy Ghost you may know the truth of all things." I am sure the Lord will not tell one person that the theory of organic evolution is true and another person it is false. Then again, let us remember that we always have the guidance of that which the Lord has revealed. Should not this outweigh all the philosophy and theory and doctrine gained by man through uninspired research?

Now I trust you will receive this in the spirit in which it is intended. I will long remember my visit with you in England as being a very pleasant occasion. I have thought of you frequently and pray that the Spirit of the Lord may be your constant guide. If it were possible I would like to sit down with you and consider all of these things calmly and in the spirit of prayer.

Very Sincerely Your Brother, Joseph Fielding Smith

Missionary David S. King responds:

You mentioned a certain letter which President Lyman showed to you, and which evidently prompted the letter which I received from you to-day. I wrote that letter to President Lyman either before, or shortly after I had had that conversation with you in London. Since then I have done much thinking and praying on the subject, and my mind is somewhat more clarified. After examining the scriptures, and some of the references you have sent me, my mind has swung far over toward the direction of accepting the scriptures literally. I would far rather place my faith in the Lord and in His revealed word than in the findings of scientists. People too often erroneously imagine that the age in which they live has a monopoly on truth, and that the latest findings of the scientists will inevitably stand for all time, unchallenged.

The problem that is worrying me now, more than any other, is the fact that the Saints as a whole are drifting away from the fundamentals of the gospel. Their knowledge of the scriptures is shockingly little.

I certainly did appreciate the interest you took in my spiritual orientation, President Smith. I shall never forget it. ... Please give my kindness regards to Sister Smith, who was so wonderful to all the British missionaries. ...

Your sincere friend and fellow-servant,

David S. King

And again David S. King writes:

This is just a brief note to thank you sincerely for sending me an autographed copy of your book “the Progress of Man”. I deeply appreciate the effort you have made, and the time you have spent, to send me instructive letters to guide me in my spiritual growth.

Very Sincerely and Respectfully yours,

David S. King

The Intended Path (Expelling the Devil’s Lie that there was “No Other Way” in Eden, Against Contrary Commandments) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-intended-path>

The Intended Path

Note: In this essay, Dr. Bob will consider how things might have panned out differently in Eden. This is not unlike a family who chooses one way rather than another, and has different results. Hard times can prove us, and decisions of parents do bring consequences on children. Bob and all of us recognize that God turned things for good, but this doesn’t mean things couldn’t have gone differently and still have fulfilled God’s plan. End note.

Timing, Maturity, and God’s Gracious Offering: Rejecting Satan’s Lie of “No Other Way”

Satan is a liar, always. As the father of lies (John 8:44; Moses 4:4), his deception in Eden centered on the assertion that partaking of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil was the only way to knowledge, godlike discernment, procreation, and progression. This lie, embedded in his words to Eve, “Ye shall not surely die... ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil” (Genesis 3:4–5; Moses 4:7–11), framed the act as mandatory secrecy and autonomous shortcut. Yet if Satan lies, there was another way. The intended path was one of patient timing and spiritual maturity under God’s guidance. God would have lifted the prohibition in His perfect time, offering the fruit, or its blessings, directly, sanctifying the transition into mortality and full agency without transgression.

This perspective honors the rich exegetical depth of Genesis while preserving agency, divine mercy, and the “fortunate Fall.” It draws from the Hebrew text’s emphasis on certain consequences (“*mot tamut*”), the merism of “good and evil,” the introduction of entropy and opposition, and restored Latter-day Saint insights. The Fall became fortunate not because it was the sole design, but because God, in His foreknowledge, redeemed humanity’s impatience through the Atonement of Jesus Christ. Other worlds testify that God’s plan succeeds through divine timing, not the adversary’s supplanting haste.

The Apparent Contradiction, Satan’s Exploitation, and the Hebrew Warning

God commanded Adam and Eve to “be fruitful and multiply” (Genesis 1:28; Moses 2:28) while prohibiting the Tree of Knowledge: “in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die” (Genesis 2:17). The Hebrew *mot tamut* (מוֹת תָּמוּת), infinitive absolute paired with imperfect, emphatically declares certainty and inevitability: “dying you shall die.” As Adam Clarke noted, this means spiritual death (loss of God’s life) immediate upon transgression, with physical mortality beginning as a “dying state” leading to dust. “Yom” (“day”) carries its ordinary sense of immediate timeframe: consequences commenced that very day.

In pre-Fall Eden, Adam and Eve existed in paradisiacal immortality, innocent yet immature, childlike as Irenaeus described, sustained by God’s presence and the Light of Christ, which restrained entropy and upheld order (Doctrine and Covenants 88:6–13; Colossians 1:17). Procreation in its full mortal sense seemed incompatible with this state (2 Nephi 2:22–23). Satan exploited this tension, lying that the fruit alone unlocked progression and that God withheld good out of jealousy. His claim twisted a half-truth: progression to knowledge and family does occur across God’s creations, but under divine orchestration, not premature seizure. By urging independence, Satan attempted to supplant God’s role as Author and Offerer.

Timing and Maturity: The Intended Path in Ancient Witnesses

Early Church Father Irenaeus (2nd century) powerfully illuminates this. He portrayed Adam and Eve as infants or children, innocent, naked without shame, unpracticed in full discipline. God created them not perfect but capable of growth toward divine likeness through dependence and time. The fruit represented “adult food” they were not yet ready to receive. Patient maturation under the Divine Pedagogue would have brought readiness; God could then have commanded or offered the fruit, introducing opposition and procreation in a sanctified manner. The Fall retarded this growth through impatience, yet God used it pedagogically.

Rabbinical traditions align. Some midrashim suggest that had Adam waited until the eve of Shabbat (Sabbath), the prohibition might have been lifted, allowing sanctified partaking, perhaps with wine from the fruit in a covenantal context. Eve’s embellishment (“neither shall ye touch it”) and premature desire opened vulnerability. Gradual obedience could have introduced the *yetzer hara* (inclination toward evil) controllably, without full rupture.

In restored scripture, Moses 3:17 preserves agency: “Nevertheless, thou mayest choose for thyself.” The Tree served as a boundary for testing readiness, stewardship (naming animals), communion, before God Himself offered the experiential knowledge of “good and evil” as merism: the full spectrum of opposition, tasting mortality to value life, suffering for joy, evil to choose good (Genesis 2:9, 17; 2 Nephi 2:15). Partaking was profoundly sensory and embodied, “good for food... delight to the eyes... desired to make one wise” (Genesis 3:6), producing immediate knowledge: eyes opened, nakedness known, shame entering. This was not abstract but a discrete, historical “stone” event with cosmic effects.

The Tree as Stone, Symbol, and Shadow: Entropy, Thorns, and Redemption

The narrative is historical stone: an actual tree, literal fruit, discrete transgression introducing irreversible change. As merism, “knowledge of good and evil” signifies totality through opposition, not primarily moral dualism or sexuality (refuted by narrative sequence: Eve partook alone first; procreation already commanded). Post-Fall, entropy fully manifested: decay, toil, death. The Curse brought “thorns also and thistles” (Genesis 3:18), tangible markers of resistance where abundance once reigned.

This shift likely resulted from withdrawal of God’s localized sustaining presence and Light of Christ after expulsion (Genesis 3:8, 23–24). Pre-Fall Eden, as extension of divine order, held entropy at bay. The Fall unleashed its effects, not inventing physical laws but removing restraint, aligning with observable reality

while preserving historicity. Thorns link directly to the Atonement: the second Adam, Christ, bore a crown of thorns on the tree of the cross (Matthew 27:29), assuming the first Adam's curse. Eden's disobedience amid trees; Gethsemane's submission; Golgotha's obedience, two gardens, two trees, thorns binding Fall and redemption. Eschatologically, Revelation 22 restores the Tree of Life with no curse.

Other Worlds: God's Authored Plan Without the Lie

The Pearl of Great Price reveals "worlds without number" created and passed away by God's power (Moses 1:33, 35; Abraham 3). These testify that the plan, progression through agency, opposition, knowledge, and redemption, has been implemented successfully elsewhere. On those worlds, inhabitants likely matured in timing, receiving knowledge under God's offering rather than believing the adversary's "only way." Satan's presumptuous claim here (echoing "known and done in other worlds") was a lie of supplanting. This earth became the Redeemer's stage precisely because the detour introduced profound opposition, magnifying Christ's victory. The fortunate outcome does not sanctify the lie.

Reconciling the Fortunate Fall

Latter-day Saint doctrine celebrates the Fall: "Adam fell that men might be; and men are, that they might have joy" (2 Nephi 2:25; Moses 5:10–11). It enabled families, agency, opposition, and the Atonement, essential pillars. This is profoundly true on this earth. Yet Satan's "no other way" cannot become doctrine. The Fall was fortunate despite deviation, because God's foreknowledge prepared redemption from before the foundation (Moses 4:2). Impatience, willingness to believe the lie, introduced suffering; Christ transforms it into exaltation's forge. We inherit conditions, not guilt (Article of Faith 2). Other worlds show God's plan endures without elevating transgression.

Implications for Today

- **Agency and Trust:** The setup tested faith. Would we wait for God's timing or seize autonomy? Daily, Satan whispers shortcuts are "the only way."
- **Personal Application:** Embrace maturity amid opposition. Pursue knowledge with God. Wear mortality's thorns with faith, anticipating the crown of glory.

- **Hope Amid Paradox:** As in my other discussions, Genesis pulses with stone (historicity, entropy, “mot tamut”), symbol (merism, Chinese ideographs encoding garden motifs), and shadow (Eden to Cross to New Jerusalem). Apparent contradictions reveal divine wisdom.

In conclusion, Satan lied: there was another way, waiting, maturing, receiving from God’s hand. Adam and Eve’s choice, born of impatience in a childlike state, introduced the Fall we know. Yet God authored redemption, making it fortunate here as on countless worlds. This exalts the Atonement. Trust timing over temptation, the Father of Truth over the father of lies. Progress comes through Christ, who reverses death’s sentence (“mot tamut” overcome) and restores paradise, where knowledge serves eternal joy without curse.

On the Tree of Knowledge & The Fall: Essay by Dr. Robert Wright: Literal & Symbolic Meanings, Doctrinal & Scientific

Also read the essay on his website at this page:

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-tree-of-knowledge-of-good-and-evil-symbol-shadow-and-stone>. You’ll also find other terrific resources there.

Here it is, accessed 5.9.26:

The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil: Symbol, Shadow, and Stone

(Dr. Robert Wright: Dr. Bob, a Latter-day Saint creation advocate, was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master’s Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It’s OK to Believe* and *Satan’s War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com.)

This interpretation is an application of concepts first introduced in Token of the Bow, and expanded in What Happened to Hope? in the chapter Symbols, Shadows, and Stone. Using the principles first expressed there, this analysis applies these concepts to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil God placed in the Garden of Eden. It is a work in progress. Dr, Robert L. Wright

The account of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in Genesis 2–3 stands as one of the most pivotal and multilayered narratives in scripture. Far from requiring us to force it into a single category of pure symbol, mere literary shadow, or rigid historical fact, the story exemplifies the principle articulated in my chapter *Symbols, Shadows and Stone*. Scripture, and life itself, can embody all three simultaneously. Each dimension enriches the others without diminishing their power. The references to the tree unfold within a historical narrative that is stone: a discrete, factual event involving an actual tree and actual fruit. Yet it pulses with symbolic depth, including its name as a classic merism, and prophetic or shadow significance. It prefigures Christ’s Atonement, the introduction of opposition and mortality into the cosmos, and the eschatological restoration of paradise. This essay offers a thorough exegetical analysis. It draws on biblical, Christian, Latter-day Saint (LDS), early Israelite, Near Eastern, and even cross-linguistic evidence. It addresses the experiential reality of the Fall, refutes overly sexualized interpretations, explores its cosmic implications including entropy, and traces parallels with Gethsemane, the cross, and end-times events. The inclusion of thorns in the curse and the crown of thorns at the crucifixion further reinforces these connections between the Tree, the Fall, and Christ’s redemptive work on the tree of the cross. Ultimately, the Tree invites us not only to understand ancient scripture but to apply its truths personally.

The Broader Concept of Merism and Its Application to the Tree

A merism is a literary device common in Biblical Hebrew. It expresses a totality or completeness by naming two contrasting extremes or poles, implying everything in between. Classic examples include “heavens and earth” in Genesis 1:1 for the entire universe, “evening and morning” in Genesis 1:5 for a full day, or “high and low” in English for a comprehensive search. In Genesis 2:9 and 2:17, the phrase “tree of the knowledge of good and evil” (Hebrew: *‘ēš hadda‘at ṭōb wārā’*) employs “good and evil” (*ṭōb wārā’*) as a merism. Literally “good and bad or evil,” it does not primarily denote moral dualism or sexual awareness. Instead it signifies comprehensive knowledge: everything from the best to the worst, omniscience-like discernment, or the full spectrum of experiential reality. The serpent promises in Genesis 3:5 that eating will make them “like God, knowing good and evil,” echoing divine totality (cf. 2 Samuel 14:17; Deuteronomy 1:39). Hebrew *da‘at* here functions as “knowing” (infinitive or gerund) or experiential knowledge, not mere factual data (*yāda’*). The tree therefore represents the acquisition of godlike wisdom through opposition: tasting mortality to appreciate life, suffering to value joy, and evil to choose good.

This merism does not reduce the tree to pure allegory. It operates within a concrete narrative framework. This allows the event to be simultaneously factual (stone), typological (shadow), and richly symbolic.

The Historical Narrative as “Stone”: An Actual Tree, Actual Fruit, Discrete Event

Symbols, Shadows and Stone argues that many dismiss early Genesis as legend. Yet archaeological stone such as the Tel Dan Stela or NHM altars grounds even symbolic elements in history. The Genesis account presents the Tree of Knowledge likewise: not myth or mere parable, but embedded in a factual primeval history. God plants “every tree” (Genesis 2:9), including this specific one “in the midst of the garden,” alongside the Tree of Life. The command is literal: “of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat” (Genesis 2:17; cf. Moses 3:16–17 in LDS Pearl of Great Price). Eve “took of its fruit and ate” (Genesis 3:6), then shared it. These were discrete actions with immediate, physical consequences (eyes opened, fig leaves, expulsion).

LDS prophetic teachings affirm this historicity while embracing multiplicity. The fruit was literal food causing bodily change from paradisiacal immortality to mortality. Lehi in 2 Nephi 2:15 explicitly sets “the forbidden fruit in opposition to the tree of life; the one being sweet and the other bitter,” underscoring tangible opposition. The Fall was a transgression (not a sin in the fullest sense), a deliberate choice enabling progression. This aligns with the document’s stone: actual people (Adam, Eve) in a real setting, whose choices have enduring historical and covenantal weight.

The event was discrete: one forbidden act at one moment, introducing irreversible change. This singularity mirrors the Atonement’s discrete efficacy, one sacrifice for all.

Experiential Nature of Partaking and Issues with Sexual Transgression Theories

Partaking was profoundly experiential, not abstract or intellectual. The fruit was “good for food,” “a delight to the eyes,” and “to be desired to make one wise”

(Genesis 3:6), sensory and volitional. Eating produced immediate knowledge through experience: “the eyes of both were opened, and they knew that they were naked” (Genesis 3:7). Shame, mortality awareness, and toil entered their reality. In LDS terms (2 Nephi 2:23–25; Moses 5:11), it enabled seed, joy, and redemption: opposition experienced, not theorized. Eve’s solitary act underscores agency and the personal, embodied cost of choice.

This experiential core exposes flaws in sexual interpretations of the Fall. Eve partakes alone first (“she took of its fruit and ate”), then gives to Adam “who was with her” (Genesis 3:6). The transgression precedes any spousal interaction, and God had already commanded “be fruitful and multiply” (Genesis 1:28) before the Fall. Post-Fall shame over nakedness arises after eating, as consequence, not cause. Early Christian and Jewish sources focus on disobedience rather than sex as the primal sin. Sexual interpretations often import Canaanite fertility motifs anachronistically, ignoring the narrative sequence and merism’s broader scope. The Fall enables full human sexuality within covenant, but the tree itself enacts mortality and moral agency.

Biblical, Christian, and LDS Implications: Entropy, the Curse, Thorns, and Cosmic Change

The Fall as a discrete event introduced entropy: decay, death, and disorder into the universe. This aligns with the Curse (Genesis 3:17–19): cursed ground, “thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee,” sweat, and return to dust. The introduction of thorns is no incidental detail. It directly stems from the transgression tied to the Tree of Knowledge. Pre-Fall, the ground yielded effortless abundance. Post-Fall, it resisted with painful, entropic growth. Thorns symbolize the new reality of opposition, toil, and mortality. Some creationist and LDS-adjacent views link this to the second law of thermodynamics. The universe’s tendency toward disorder was not inherent in the pristine creation but allowed to exist by the Fall. This explains physical death, disease, and natural evil. This is not mere symbolism but a factual shift in cosmic conditions. It enables opposition (2 Nephi 2:11) while necessitating redemption.

Christian theology sees the Tree’s fruit as the gateway to original sin’s transmission (Romans 5:12). LDS doctrine celebrates the fortunate Fall (*felix*

culpa): “Adam fell that men might be; and men are, that they might have joy” (2 Nephi 2:25). The event was necessary for agency, family, and exaltation, yet still required Christ’s intervention. The thorns of the curse become a profound link to the Atonement. At Christ’s crucifixion, soldiers wove a crown of thorns and placed it on his head (Matthew 27:29; Mark 15:17; John 19:2, 5). The second Adam, hanging on a tree (the cross; see Acts 5:30; Galatians 3:13; Deuteronomy 21:23), literally bore upon his brow the very thorns that the first Adam’s act had introduced into the world. This crown was not random mockery but a typological fulfillment. Christ, who knew no sin, wore the emblem of the Fall’s curse to redeem it. The tree that brought knowledge through disobedience produced thorns. The tree (cross) of obedience bore the King crowned with those thorns, reversing the curse and bearing its full weight. In this way, the historical reality of the Tree of Knowledge and its immediate consequences (thorns) find their prophetic shadow in the crucifixion. Stone, symbol, and shadow converge in the Savior’s suffering.

A Scientific Basis for the Fall and the Introduction of Entropy?

Some have explored possible scientific correlation to the theological reality of the Fall introducing entropy, decay, and death into the created order. The Second Law of Thermodynamics describes the universal tendency toward increasing disorder, or entropy, in isolated systems. While the fundamental laws of physics, including thermodynamics, appear to have been operative from the initial creation (evidenced by processes such as solar energy transfer and digestion), many interpreters suggest that pre-Fall conditions were supernaturally sustained in a state of remarkable order and immortality. The discrete act of partaking of the forbidden fruit may have triggered a profound physical and biological shift.

In this view, the fruit itself could have contained properties or initiated biochemical processes that fundamentally altered human physiology and, by extension, the broader creation. Possible mechanisms include the introduction of oxidative stress, free radical damage, or the activation of genetic programs for aging and cellular senescence. Such changes would align with the experiential knowledge gained: mortality and the full spectrum of opposition became embodied realities.

From an LDS perspective, the transition from a paradisiacal, immortal state to mortality involved a real physical transformation. The partaking of the actual fruit enacted this change, removing the divine sustaining influence that had previously counteracted or minimized entropic effects. This is not to say the Second Law itself originated at the Fall, but that its full, unchecked consequences for living organisms and the ground (thorns, toil, death) were unleashed. The curse pronounced upon the ground and the introduction of thorns serve as tangible markers of this new entropic reality. Ultimately, these scientific reflections remain interpretive models. They illustrate how the historical stone of the Fall could produce measurable physical consequences while retaining its rich symbolic and typological power.

Theological Interpretation: The Removal of the Light of Christ and God's Presence

My personal belief is that the introduction of entropy at the Fall did not require any alteration to the fundamental structure or laws of the universe. Instead, it resulted from the withdrawal of the Light of Christ and the direct sustaining presence of God. Scripture records that light was created on the first day (Genesis 1:3–5), long before the sun, moon, or stars. This is the Light of Christ, which “proceedeth forth from the presence of God to fill the immensity of space” and “is the light which is in all things, which giveth life to all things” (Doctrine and Covenants 88:6–13; see also John 1:4–9; Doctrine and Covenants 93:2). This divine light or power upholds, animates, and orders all creation (Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:3). In the paradisiacal state of Eden, God's personal presence provided an extraordinary environment of order, immortality, and abundance. The garden itself was a localized extension of divine presence, where death, decay, and entropy were held at bay (Genesis 2:8–15; Moses 3:8–9).

The discrete transgression involving the Tree of Knowledge changed this dynamic. When Adam and Eve partook of the fruit, they became subject to the conditions of mortality. God then withdrew His immediate presence, as evidenced by the expulsion from the garden and the placement of cherubim to guard the way to the Tree of Life (Genesis 3:8, 23–24; Moses 4:28–31). With the sustaining influence of God's presence and the associated Light of Christ no longer operating in the same direct and localized manner within Eden, the natural tendencies toward disorder, previously restrained or counteracted, were fully unleashed. Entropy, decay, and death entered human experience and the broader creation not as newly invented physical realities but as the inevitable result of the removal of that divine restraining and ordering force. The thorns and thistles of the curse (Genesis 3:18) thus serve as visible signs of a cosmos now operating in

the reduced light of a fallen world, relying on the partial light provided by the sun. This model preserves the historicity of the Fall as stone while harmonizing it with observable scientific realities. It also deepens the typological shadow: Christ, who is the Light of the World, later enters the fallen world to restore what was lost through His Atonement, ultimately culminating in the eschatological return of God's full presence, the removal of dependence on the sun, "And night will be no more. They will need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and they will reign forever and ever" (Revelation 22:5), accompanied by the removal of every curse.

Relevance of Analyzing Eden with Gethsemane, the Cross, and Eschatological Events

Scripture invites typological reading. Eden parallels Gethsemane and the cross as shadow and fulfillment. In Eden's garden, the first Adam disobeys amid trees. He grasps godlikeness through forbidden fruit and introduces death and thorns. In Gethsemane's garden, the second Adam (Christ) submits perfectly ("not my will, but thine," Luke 22:42). He sweats blood (symbolic of life poured out) and reverses the choice. The cross, itself a tree, becomes the antitype. Christ bears the curse Adam incurred, including the thorns now fashioned into a crown of derision and pain. Where Eden's tree brought knowledge through transgression, Golgotha's tree brings redemption through obedience. This is a tale of two gardens, two trees, and the thorns that bind them: one of knowledge leading to expulsion and cursed ground, one of death leading to reconciliation. The crown of thorns visibly unites the consequences of the Fall to the head of the Redeemer. The crown reinforces the tree motif at every level. The forbidden tree's fruit led to thorns in the soil. The cross (tree) of atonement is crowned with those same thorns, declaring victory over the very entropy and opposition the original tree unleashed.

Eschatologically, Revelation 22 restores paradise. The Tree of Life returns in the New Jerusalem (no longer barred). It bears monthly fruit for the healing of nations, with "no more curse" (Revelation 22:2–3). The Tree of Knowledge is absent because redemption is complete. Moral agency, tested through opposition (including thorns), yields to eternal life without further probation. The merism's totality finds resolution in Christ, who "knows" good and evil perfectly yet triumphs, and who wore the thorns so that we need not.

Early Israelite Discussions, Near Eastern References, and Linguistic Connections

Early Israelite tradition (Talmud, Midrash) speculates concretely on the tree's nature while preserving historicity. The Talmud (*Sanhedrin* 70a; *Berakhot*) debates the fruit: grape, fig, or wheat. Midrashim portray the serpent as *yetzer hara* or external tempter, emphasizing moral growth. These affirm the event's reality while extracting symbolic lessons, with no wholesale allegorization. The thorns of Genesis 3:18 receive similar attention in later rabbinic sources as emblematic of post-Fall struggle. This further underscores the curse's tangible reality.

Near Eastern parallels (Adapa myth, Gilgamesh Epic) provide context but highlight Genesis's polemic. Genesis rejects sexual fall or cyclical myth. It affirms linear history, human responsibility, and one God's sovereignty. Linguistically, Hebrew *ṭōb wārā'* as merism has Egyptian and Homeric parallels. Ancient Chinese pictographs encode Genesis motifs with striking specificity. The character for "garden" (園) incorporates components evoking an enclosure containing two persons (or a man formed from dust receiving breath), directly recalling the creation of Adam and Eve and their placement in Eden. The character for "covet" or "desire" (婪 *lán*) is composed of two trees (林) combined with a woman (女), vividly depicting Eve's temptation as she faces one of the two special trees in the garden. The character for "forbidden" or "prohibit" (禁 *jìn*) consists of two trees (林) alongside a divine command or proclamation (示), precisely mirroring God's explicit prohibition against eating from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Additional characters evoke temptation or the tempter as elements suggesting a garden or trees combined with a secretive or devilish figure. These ideographic compositions, preserved in the earliest oracle bone and bronze inscriptions, offer independent linguistic stone corroboration. They suggest that post-Babel dispersion carried primeval memories of the Genesis account into ancient Chinese culture, embedding the historical reality of the Fall, the two trees, the woman, and the divine prohibition into the very structure of their written language.

Full Exegetical Analysis and Application

Exegetically, Genesis 2:9 plants the trees amid provision. Genesis 2:15–17 commissions humanity as stewards with agency and one prohibition (death as consequence, spiritual and physical). Chapter 3 presents the serpent’s craft, Eve’s rationalization, Adam’s complicity, divine interrogation, curses (including thorns), and expulsion (cherubim guarding Tree of Life). These form a tight narrative arc of disobedience, knowledge, mortality, and hope (protoevangelium in 3:15). The merism, sensory details, etiology of pain, toil, thorns, death, and typological threads integrate symbol, history, and prophecy seamlessly. The crown of thorns in the Gospels completes the exegetical arc. The curse pronounced because of the Tree is visibly assumed by Christ on the cross-tree.

Application, per *Symbols, Shadows and Stone*, transforms this. Surround yourself with personal symbols (temple motifs, reminders of covenants) evoking the garden’s paradise and the crown that redeems its thorns. Become shadows of Christ through service amid opposition. Wear the thorns of mortality with faith. Glimpse stone: bedrock realities of the Fall’s necessity and Atonement’s power in personal trials. This fosters faith like Adam and Eve’s post-Fall joy. The Tree teaches that factual events (actual fruit, actual thorns) yield eternal symbols and shadows. We, like our first parents, choose daily between life and knowledge through opposition. We progress toward the restored Tree of Life, free from curse and crowned with glory.

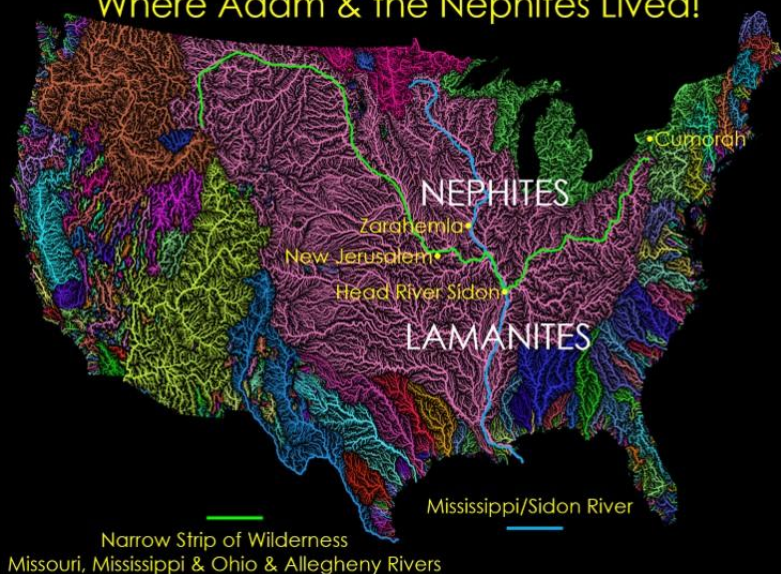
In embracing all three lenses, we avoid the uncertainty plaguing critical thinkers and discover scripture’s incredible richness. The Tree of Knowledge was real. Its fruit was tasted. Its consequences (including thorns) were cosmic. Yet its story points unerringly to Christ, who wore the crown of thorns on the tree of the cross. He turns the Fall’s bitter fruit into eternal joy.

The 4 Rivers of Eden in America: Map by Rian Nelson

Shared with permission. See BookofMormonEvidence.org/maps.

This Pink section is the Heartland of the United States River System:
Mississippi, Upper and Lower with the Missouri and Ohio Rivers, just like in Genesis.

Where Adam & the Nephites Lived!



Fallen from God, Not Risen from Animal

We know from abundant scientific and Christian revelations that Adam, the first man, was made directly by God, in the image of God. Who was Adam's father? It was God (see Luke 3:38). The ape-man was not man's ancestor. The ape-man, it turns out, is just a fairy tale spun by evolutionists, based on bias hyped up claims, rejecting the plain truth we see in nature and the word of God. Grasping at straws, secular men of the world have invented all manner of fantasies to explain the origin of man, allowing for all possibilities except that espoused by the word of God.

Even Christians have been pulled into the mess, and somehow, even members of the restored church of Jesus Christ have fallen into the ways of the world about human origins. It is redundant and rank foolishness to consider the ape as the father of man, yet this is the claim of the evolutionists – that time and chance brought about mysterious changes to create the human kind from the animal kind. They have gotten it backward. Man fell from God, he did not rise from animal.

Many have been tangled in the web of evolution theory, so much so that most good people today have no way to combat its claims. In this book you'll find many reasons, from faith and nature, to finally reject the pesky dogma of evolution.

This volume focuses on biological evidences, genetics, and the nature of man. It highlights teachings of prophets and stirring insights from faithful scientists.